ISSN 1949-8519 (Print) ISSN 2154-6711 (Online)

# Forum for World Literature Studies

Special Issue 世界文学研究论坛

Vol.14 No.5 2022





Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong • West Lafayette

### Forum for World Literature Studies

Vol.14, No.5, 2022

#### **Editors in Chief**

Nie Zhenzhao, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, China Charles Ross, Purdue University, U.S.A

#### **Associate Editors in Chief**

Yang Gexin, Zhejiang University, China Angelique Richardson, University of Exeter, UK

#### **Editorial Assistants**

Su Chen, Zhejiang University, China Ma Xiaoli, Zhejiang University, China Xue Ranran, Zhejiang University, China



Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong · West Lafayette

#### 世界文学研究论坛

2022年第5期

#### 主编

聂珍钊/广东外语外贸大学(中国) 查尔斯·罗斯/普渡大学(美国)

#### 副主编

杨革新 / 浙江大学 (中国) 安琪莉珂・理查森 / 埃克塞特大学 (英国)

#### 编辑助理

苏 忱/浙江大学(中国) 马晓俐/浙江大学(中国) 薛冉冉/浙江大学(中国)



香港•西拉法叶

### Forum for World Literature Studies

Vol.14, No.5, 2022

#### **Special Issue**

Ethical Literary Criticism in the Age of Artificial Intelligence

Edited by Ren Jie



Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong · West Lafayette

### 世界文学研究论坛

2022年第5期

### 学术专刊 人工智能时代的文学伦理学批评 专刊主编:任洁



#### **Editorial Board**

Valerie Babb / University of Georgia, USA Massimo Bacigalupo / Universita' di Genova, Italy Elleke Boehmer / University of Oxford, UK Marshall Brown / University of Washington, USA Tv Buckman / Wittenberg University, USA Knut Brynhildsvoll / University of Oslo, Norway Alison Calder / University of Manitoba, Canada Arturo Casas / Universidade de Santiago de Compostela, Spain Claire Connolly / University College Cork, Ireland Chen Zhongyi / Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, China Malgorzata Czerminska / University of Gdansk, Poland Fan Pik Wah / University of Malaya, Malaysia Fan Xing / Wuhan University, China Harry Garuba / University of Cape Town, South Africa Margot Hillel / Australian Catholic University, Australia Martin Humpal / Charles University in Prague, Czech Republic Hitoshi Oshima / Kyushu University, Japan Hank Lazer / University of Alabama, USA Lim Dae Geun / Hankuk University of Foreign Studies, Korea Khairy Douma / Cairo University, Egypt Leevi Lehto / Finland Liao Kebin / Peking University, China Liu Jianjun / Northeast Normal University, China Luo Lianggong / Central China Normal University, China Roland Lysell / University of Stockholm, Sweden Anne-Marie Mai / University of Southern Denmark, Denmark Jale Parla / Istanbul Bilgi University, Turky Irina Dmitrievna Prokhorova / New Literary Observer, Russia Elizabeth Ramos / Universidade Federal da Bahia, Brazil John Rathmell / University of Cambridge, UK Derek Parker Royal / University of Texas at Dallas, USA Stephan Michael Schröder / University of Cologne, Germany Monica Spiridon / Bucharest University, Romania Shang Biwu / Shanghai Jiaotong University, China Sun Jian / Fudan University, China Jüri Talvet / University of Tartu, Estonia Kwok-kan Tam / Hang Seng University of Hong Kong, China Galin Tihanov / Queen Mary University of London, UK Jørgen Veisland / University of Gdansk, Poland Tatiana Venediktova / Lomonosov Moscow State University, Russia Tomo Virk / University of Ljubljana, Slovenia Wang Lixing / Nankai University, China Yin Qiping / Hangzhou Normal University, China Zhu Zhenwu / Shanghai Normal University, China

#### 编委会

瓦莱丽•巴布/佐治亚大学(美国)

马西姆•巴斯加拉珀/热那亚大学(意大利)

艾雷克•博埃默/牛津大学(英国)

马歇尔•布朗/华盛顿大学(美国)

台艾·巴克曼/威登堡大学(美国)

克努特 • 布莱恩希尔兹沃/奥斯陆大学(挪威)

艾丽森•卡尔德/曼尼托巴大学(加拿大)

阿图罗•卡萨斯/地亚哥-德孔波斯特拉大学(西班牙)

克莱尔•康诺利/科克大学(爱尔兰)

陈众议/中国社会科学院(中国)

莫尔戈扎塔•泽尔明斯卡/哥但斯克大学(波兰)

潘碧华/马来亚大学(马来西亚)

樊星/武汉大学(中国)

哈利·戈乌巴/开普敦大学(南非)

玛格特•希勒尔/澳大利亚天主教大学(澳大利亚)

马丁•罕帕尔/布拉格查理大学(捷克)

大屿仁/九州大学(日本)

汉克•雷泽尔/阿拉巴马大学(美国)

林大根/韩国外国语大学(韩国)

哈伊里・杜马/开罗大学(埃及)

利维•利托/(芬兰)

廖可斌 / 北京大学(中国)

刘建军 / 东北师范大学 (中国)

罗良功/华中师范大学(中国)

罗兰•利塞尔/斯德哥尔摩大学(瑞典)

安妮-玛丽•梅/南丹麦大学(丹麦)

基尔•帕拉/伊斯坦布尔比尔基大学(土耳其)

伊莉娜·德米特里耶夫娜·普罗霍罗娃/《新文学评论》(俄国)

伊丽莎白•拉莫斯/巴赫亚联邦大学(巴西)

约翰·拉斯梅尔/剑桥大学(英国)

德雷克・帕克・罗亚尔/德克萨斯大学达拉斯分校(美国)

斯蒂芬•迈克尔•施罗德/科隆大学(德国)

莫里卡·斯普里顿/布加勒斯特大学(罗马尼亚)

尚必武 / 上海交通大学(中国)

孙建/复旦大学(中国)

居里•塔尔维特/塔尔图大学(爱沙尼亚)

谭国根 / 香港恒牛大学(中国)

加林•提哈诺夫/伦敦大学玛丽女王学院(英国)

乔根·维斯兰德/哥但斯克大学(波兰)

塔吉亚娜 • 维涅季克托娃 / 国立莫斯科大学 (俄国)

托莫•维尔克/卢布尔雅娜大学(斯洛文尼亚)

王立新/南开大学(中国)

殷企平/杭州师范大学(中国)

朱振武 / 上海师范大学 (中国)

Forum for World Literature Studies (Print ISSN: 1949-8519; Online ISSN: 2154-6711), published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited, is a peer reviewed academic journal sponsored by Guangdong University of Foreign Studies and Zhejiang University and co-edited by Professor Nie Zhenzhao of Guangdong University of Foreign Studies and Professor Charles Ross of Purdue University. This journal provides a forum to promote diversity in world literature, with a particular interest in the study of literatures of those neglected countries and culture regions. With four issues coming out every year, this journal publishes original articles on topics including theoretical studies, literary criticism, literary history, and cultural studies, as well as book review articles.

Forum for World Literature Studies accepts submissions in English or Chinese by authors from all over the world. The manuscript is expected to be of about 5000-8000 words and must follow the MLA style. Submission should be made including an abstract of about 200 words, a short biography of the author, and three to five keywords, as well as the main body of the essay. Manuscripts should be sent to: fwlstudies@163.com or fwlsmarket@163.com. Website: http://www.fwls.org.

*The Publisher and Editorial Office Address*: Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited, Hong Kong SAR, China. To subscribe to this journal or purchase any single issue, please contact the editorial office at 6 East Building, Zijingang Campus, Zhejiang University, 866 Yuhangtang Rd, Hangzhou 310058, P.R. China. Tel: +86-571-8898-2010, Email: fwlsmarket@163.com or fwlstudies@163.com.

*Forum for World Literature Studies* is indexed in ESCI, SCOPUS and also included in the databases of EBSCO, Gale, MLA (MLA International Bibliography) and ABELL (The Annual Bibligraphy of English Language and Literature).

This journal is registered under its ISSN with the Copyright Clearance Centre, 222 Rosewood Drive, Danvers, MA 09123 (www.copyright.com). Copyright ©2009 by *Forum for World Literature Studies*. All rights reserved. No copy shall be made without the permission of the publisher.

#### **Contents**

735-744	Interdisciplinary Studies and the Construction of Discourse System of
	Ethical Literary Criticism
	Ren Jie
745-764	Poetry-reading in the End Times?—AIs, Human States of Being and the
	"Overman" in Malaysian Chinese Literature
	Florence Kuek
765-778	Heavy or Light: Makeup as an Ethical Choice in <i>The Razor's Edge</i>
	Lou Yu
779-792	From Free Will to Ethical Responsibility: Interpretation of Philip Roth's
	View on Ethical Choice in The Ghost Writer
	Qiao Chuandai
793-807	The Ethics of Technology: Reflection on Gendered Science in Oryx and
	Crake
	Zhu Xinzhu
808-818	Interpretation of Ethical Literary Criticism in Onggojipjeon from the
	Perspective of "Clone"
	Lin Xueqi
	Jae Woo Park
819-828	Ethics of Cyberfeminism in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus
	Sun Yanping
	Huang Mengqin
829-837	Reflections on Modernity and Ethics of Science and Technology in <i>Inter</i>
	Ice Age 4
	Xu Jinghua
838-846	Ethical Causes of Shakespeare's Tragedy Othello
	Li Zhengshuan
	Zhu Huimin

847-855	The Ethical Dimension of Performance in Aristophanes' Comedies			
	Li Shunpeng			
856-864	"Woman Disguised as a Man" and Ethical Choices: An Analysis of			
	Viola's Image in the Twelfth Night			
	Zhang Xiu			
865-872	Auditory Narrative and Ethical Value of Keats's "Ode to a Nightingale"			
	Liu Haiying			
873-881	Communitying Literature: On the Ethical Choice of "Refugee" Writers in			
	The Displaced			
	Li Yun			
	Zhou Pingdi			
882-890	On the Moral Crisis in Under Western Eyes and Razumov's Ethical			
	Choice			
	Yang Yuli			
891-900	The Ethical Predicament and Ethical Selection of Characters in Katai			
	Tayama's Novel Futon			
	Yang Jian			
901-910	Ethical Identity and Spatial Presentation: On the Growth Narrative of Lin			
	Nansheng in the Non-typed Spy Drama Rebel			
	Cao Yajie			
911-919	Ethics of Gender, Race and Narrative in M. Butterfly			
	Dong Xiaoye			
920-928	Ethical Dislocation and Archetypal Correction: Apocalyptic Ethics in			
	Cormac McCarthy's The Road			
	Wang Wei			
	Wang Ziyu			
929-938	Who am I? Self-cognition and Socialization in Children's Picture Books			
	Lyu Hongbo			
939-949	The Ethical Environment after the Vietnam War and Novel Creation			
	Since Renovation			

Nguyen Anh Dan

#### 目 录

- 735-744 跨学科研究与文学伦理学批评话语体系构建 任 洁
- 745-764 末世纪还读诗吗?——马华文学中的 AI、人类生存状态与"超人" 郭紫薇
- 765-778 浓与淡:《刀锋》中的妆容选择与女性身份建构 楼 昱
- 779-792 从自由意志到道德责任:解读菲利普·罗斯在《鬼作家》中的文学 伦理观 乔传代
- 793-807 技术伦理:《羚羊与秧鸡》对性别化科学的反思 朱新竹
- 808-818 "克隆"视角下《雍固执传》的文学伦理学批评解读 林雪琪 朴宰雨
- 819-828 安吉拉·卡特《马戏团之夜》中的赛博女性主义伦理 孙艳萍 黄梦琴
- 829-837 《第四间冰期》中的现代性观照与科技伦理反思 许静华
- 838-846 莎士比亚《奥赛罗》悲剧的伦理原因 李正栓 朱慧敏

847-855 阿里斯托芬喜剧表演的伦理维度 李顺鹏

856-864 "女扮男装"与伦理选择:《第十二夜》中薇奥拉的形象分析述评 张 秀

865-872 济慈《夜莺颂》的听觉叙事与伦理价值 刘海英

873-881 无名的共同体: "难民"作家的伦理选择 李 昀

周娉娣

882-890 论《在西方的目光下》中的道德危机与拉祖莫夫的伦理选择 杨玉立

891-900 《棉被》中人物的伦理困境与伦理选择 杨 建

901-910 伦理身份与空间呈现:论非类型化谍战剧《叛逆者》中林楠笙的成长叙事

曹雅洁

911-919 《蝴蝶君》的性别、种族和叙事伦理 董晓烨

920-928 伦理错位与原型纠偏:麦卡锡小说《路》中的末日伦理书写 王 薇 王梓钰

929-938 我是谁?——儿童图画书中的自我认知与社会化 吕洪波

#### 跨学科研究与文学伦理学批评话语体系构建 Interdisciplinary Studies and the Construction of Discourse System of Ethical Literary Criticism

#### 任 洁 (Ren Jie)

内容摘要: 文学的教诲功能决定了文学一定是关涉人、关涉人的物质与精神生活的,同时也决定了作为文学活动重要组成部分的文学研究必然包含与自然科学和社会科学相关的要素,拥有与各学科开展跨学科对话的学理依据。在经济全球化以及高科技发展日新月异的时代背景下,文学研究的跨学科发展已成为大势所趋。有鉴于此,文学伦理学批评广泛借鉴和吸收包括伦理学、心理学、哲学、语言学、社会学、历史学、人类学以及自然科学在内的研究成果,立足文学发展需要和现实规定性,以术语创新带动话语体系创新,继而带动观点创新和理论创新,在不断完善自身理论体系和话语体系的同时,还致力于从跨学科的角度以及使用跨学科的研究方法,通过文学理论创新展开对文学基础理论的研究,为解决当下文学观念危机和文学理论危机提供新思路,为构建全新的文学理论体系贡献力量。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;跨学科研究;理论体系;话语体系;科学技术作者简介:任洁,文学博士,浙江大学外国语学院特聘副研究员,主要从事文学伦理学批评、日本近现代文学、东亚社会与文明研究。本文为2022年度浙江省哲学社会科学规划年度重点课题"'四书'对日本古代文学的影响研究"【项目批号:22NDJC001Z】、国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号:19ZDA292】和浙江大学"重要国家和区域研究"专项项目"环波罗的海国家语言与文化研究"【项目批号:S20220211】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Interdisciplinary Studies and the Construction of Discourse System of Ethical Literary Criticism

**Abstract:** The edifying function of literature determines that literature must be human-related and concern people's material and spiritual life. It also determines that literary research, as an important part of literary activity, must contain elements related to natural and social sciences, which constructs the doctrinal basis for interdisciplinary dialogue with various disciplines. In the context of economic globalization and the rapid advancement of high technology, the interdisciplinary

development of literary studies has become a major trend. Based on the needs and reality of literary development, Ethical Literary Criticism (ELC) widely borrows and absorbs research findings of Ethics, Psychology, Philosophy, Linguistics, Sociology, History, Anthropology and Natural Sciences. Through the innovation of discourse system leading by terminological innovation, ELC achieves innovation of viewpoint and theory. While continuously improving its own theoretical system and discourse system, ELC is also committed to using interdisciplinary perspectives and research methods. Through the exploration and innovation of the basic theory of literature, ELC provides new ideas to solve the crisis of literary concepts and theory at present, and contributes to the construction of a novel literary theory system.

**Keywords:** ethical literary criticism; interdisciplinary studies; theory system; discourse system; scientific technology

**Author: Ren Jie,** is Associate Research Fellow at the School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her main research interests are Ethical Literary Criticism, modern Japanese literature, and East Asian society and civilization (Email: renjie\_85@163.com).

文学的基本功能是教诲功能,其根本目的在于为人类提供从伦理角度认识社会和生活的道德范例,为人类的自我道德完善提供经验。¹正是文学的教诲功能决定了文学一定是关涉人、关涉人的物质与精神生活的,同时也决定了作为文学活动重要组成部分的文学研究必然包含与自然科学和社会科学相关的要素,拥有与各学科开展跨学科对话的学理依据。可以说,文学研究的跨学科性质是与生俱来的,从最初借助社会学和历史学方法对文学作品进行阐释,到后来"语言论转向"背景下强调意义阐释过程中语言的作用,以及"文化转向"兴起后将目光投向艺术与人生、文本与历史、文学与权力话语的关系等,无不显示了文学研究的跨学科属性。所以,文学的跨学科研究不是"分科立学"后文学研究寻求出路的新创之物,也不是伴随各种思潮和理论的兴起而兴起、退去而退去的附属之物。它是由文学自身的跨学科属性决定的、在知识普遍性中重新审视文学特殊性的重要途径。

不可否认,在文学跨学科研究的批评实践中确实出现了如"过度运用"、"强制阐释"等问题,不同程度地导致了文学研究的"异化"和"边缘化"<sup>2</sup>,但文学研究的跨学科性质不会因此而消解,毋宁说在经济全球化以及高科技发展日新月异的时代背景下,文学研究的跨学科发展已成为大势所趋。因而,当今人文学者需要思考的不应是如何重建或强调文学研究与其他学科研究的界限,而应该是如何顺应潮流,开展具有学科包容性、知识综

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020): 89。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 蒋承勇: "跨学科互涉与文学研究方法创新", 《社会科学文摘》9(2020): 104。

合性、方法多样性的跨学科研究。为此,文学伦理学批评广泛借鉴和吸收包括伦理学、心理学、哲学、语言学、社会学、历史学、人类学以及自然科学(如生命科学、脑科学等)在内的研究成果,在不断完善自身理论体系和话语体系的同时,还致力于从跨学科的角度以及使用跨学科的研究方法,通过文学理论创新展开对文学基础理论的研究,为解决当下文学观念危机和文学理论危机提供新思路,为构建全新的文学理论体系贡献力量。

#### 文学伦理学批评理论基础的跨学科性质

文学伦理学批评以伦理选择(ethical selection)为基本理论,开创性地提出了人类文明三阶段论,即人类社会发展需要经历从自然选择(natural selection)到伦理选择、最终走向科学选择(scientific selection)的过程。<sup>1</sup>其中,伦理选择是整个选择过程的核心,自然选择作为伦理选择的必要条件而存在,而科学选择则是以伦理选择为充分条件的。

文学伦理学批评理论框架内的自然选择是在吸收达尔文生物进化论的基础之上产生的,主张自然选择解决人的形式问题,通过适应性进化机制使人在外形上从兽类发展成为人类这一更为高级的物种,具体表现为:获得直立行走的腿、灵活的手、科学排列的五官和四肢以及作为产出伦理意识的物质基础的人脑。不可否认,从生命进化的角度来看,包括人类在内的所有物种的自然选择——不论是物种范围内依靠微小变化积累而导致的种内演化,还是涉及整个染色体组遗传突变的种间演化——都在持续发生着,并将继续发生下去。但如果从人类文明发展的角度考察的话,人类的自然选择早在数百万年前就以人类具备了人的形式为标志结束了。所以,文学伦理学批评主张的自然选择并不完全同等于达尔文的自然选择学说,因为其根本目的不是解决生物学问题,而是试图借助自然学科的观念解决文学问题。具体说来,就是通过自然选择推导出伦理选择,继而强调伦理选择以及文学在人获得人的本质的过程中发挥的重要作用。

人类通过自然选择获得了人的形式,但这次选择只是一次生物性选择,不是对人的本质的选择。因此即使完成了自然选择,此时的人类也不具备从本质上把自己同其他动物区别开来的能力,还需要经历一个道德完善的过程,即伦理选择阶段。自然选择的方法是自然进化,伦理选择的方法是伦理教诲,而伦理教诲的基本手段就是文学。由此,文学伦理学批评认为,"文学的任务就是描写这种伦理秩序的变化及其变化所引发的问题和导致的结果,为人类文明进步提供经验和教诲"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》1),帮助人类完成伦理选择。至此,文学伦理学批评在理论逻辑上实现了从自然选择向伦理选择的过渡。一方面,从人类文明发展史的角度回答了人与

<sup>1</sup> 参见 杨革新: "从伦理选择到科学选择: 文学伦理学批评的理论逻辑",《文学跨学科研究》 3 (2022): 417。

其他动物的本质区别问题,即人具有人性、兽具有兽性,从而弥补了生物进化论观点的某些片面之处;另一方面,借助科学原理大胆质疑诸如文学起源于劳动、模仿、巫术、游戏的主张,并在此基础之上提出文学伦理表达论,认为文学实际源于人类伦理表达的需要,而劳动、模仿、巫术、游戏等只是文学产生的条件,无法与之互为因果<sup>1</sup>。

在伦理选择阶段,作为选择主体的人通过阅读文学等手段接受道德教诲, 在不断提高自我生存质量的同时,也在不断地改进和完善自我,以实现高度 的道德化。然而, 高度道德化的结果是去道德化。换言之, 当伦理与道德不 再是维系人类物种生存、改进、优化、繁衍的必要条件时,它就会被另外一 种标准替代,而在可预见的范围内这种新的标准就是科学的规范与标准,人 类由此进入科学选择时代。在科学选择时代,人类不再依靠有性生殖的方式 繁衍后代, 而是依据科学标准、利用科学技术(如基因技术)复制人或制造人。 由此,伦理人2被科学人所代替,人类从主体变为客体,科学技术成为人类文 明的主导。依据人类文明三阶段论,科学选择阶段是人类文明发展的最后阶段, 但这并不意味着现阶段的人类一定能够完成伦理选择,顺利进入科学选择阶 段。这是因为在进入真正的科学选择阶段之前,人类还需要经历一个由伦理 选择主导的"前科学选择"3阶段。在"前科学选择"阶段,人类所面对的许 多选择问题仍具有不同程度的伦理性质,仍要受到伦理的干预。比如,运用 克隆人技术复制人,在科学选择阶段它是一个关乎人的繁衍、学习、成长和 生活科学化的科学选择(scientific choice)问题,而在"前科学选择"阶段它 却是一个可能导致伦理秩序混乱的伦理选择(ethical choice)问题。那么,能 否处理好"前科学选择"阶段的伦理选择问题,特别是伦理人与科学人的伦 理关系问题,或将直接影响人类能否以及何时进入真正的科学选择时代。

从这一层面上讲,在科学技术飞速发展的"前科学选择"阶段,人类更加需要文学,需要借助文学广阔的想象空间获取足够的伦理经验,以解决那些人类在现实生活中未曾经历、但在未来必然需要面对的伦理问题,预见科学技术对人的影响以及思考科学技术与人杂糅共生的问题等。科幻文学的诞生与兴起,正是源于了人类表达"前科学选择"阶段的伦理的需要。但不可忽视的是,现有的文学理论已愈来愈无法适应"前科学选择"阶段的文学的发展,任何试图通过传统的、以意识形态为特征的主观研究,解析"前科学选择"阶段或科学选择阶段的文学的尝试终将是徒劳。为此,文学伦理学批评提出人类文明三阶段论,以论证在解析"前科学选择"阶段或科学选择阶

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语",《外国文学研究》1(2010):14。

<sup>2</sup> 关于伦理人解释,参见 聂珍钊、王松林主编:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》,北京:北京大学出版社,2020年,第18页。

<sup>3</sup> 或曰"后伦理选择"。

段文学作品时,引入以科学原理和技术分析为特征的科学研究<sup>1</sup>的必要性和合理性。与此同时,文学伦理学批评还致力于开展以科学为基础的文学基础理论创新,试图以此克服科学与人文在表面上的冲突,实现二者更深层次的统一。

#### 文学伦理学批评核心术语与跨学科研究

文学伦理学批评理论基础的跨学科性质决定了它的批评术语和批评实践 同样是跨学科的,这赋予文学伦理学批评以强大的生命力和创新能力,促使 其在人类文明三阶段论的基础上进一步提出文学伦理表达论、文学文本论、文学物质论、文学教诲论等观点,在不断完善自我的过程中建构起相对完备 的理论体系和话语体系。

在文学与哲学的跨学科研究方面,文学伦理学批评借鉴历史主义和新历史主义的研究方法提出伦理环境(ethical environment)这一术语,用以强调文学批评要回归历史的伦理现场,采用历史相对主义的视角来审视不同时代伦理环境下人物做出的伦理选择。<sup>2</sup>不同历史时期的文学有其固定的属于特定历史的伦理环境和伦理语境(ethical context),因此文学批评不能超越历史,也不能脱离历史,而只能构成历史。<sup>3</sup>除此之外,文学伦理学批评还吸收理性主义和非理性主义关于伦理道德的观点,将人的理性与情感协调起来给予考虑<sup>4</sup>,并在此基础上提出人性因子(human factor)、兽性因子(animal factor)、斯芬克斯因子(Sphinx factor)、自然情感(natural emotion)、理性意志(rational will)、非理性意志(irrational will)等术语,主张人类经过伦理选择从野蛮和蒙昧中走出来变成具有伦理意识的人,其过程必然包含人性因子与兽性因子、自然情感与道德情感、理性意志与非理性意志的此消彼长和相互抑制。文学作品通常描写的也正是这些力量如何影响人的伦理选择和道德行为,而文学批评则是通过分析这些力量的消长关系挖掘其中蕴藏的道德教诲价值。

在文学与心理学的跨学科研究方面,西格蒙德·弗洛伊德(Sigmund Freud)、卡尔·荣格(Cral Gustav Jung)和雅克·拉康(Jacque Lacan)的精神分析学理论"为文学伦理学批评提供了相对应的研究范式和类似的理论术语"(聂珍钊 王松林 14),启发文学伦理学批评提出诸如本能(instinct)、冲动(impulse)、自然意志(natural will)、自由意志(free will)、伦理禁忌(ethical taboo)等术语。然而,精神分析学或者侧重强调

<sup>1</sup> 该观点源自聂珍钊教授在 2021 年 4 月 9-11 日举办的"浙江省外国文学学科建设跨学科研究高层论坛"上的发言内容。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 聂珍钊、王松林主编:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》,北京:北京大学出版社,2020年,第14页。

<sup>3</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第256页。

<sup>4</sup> 参见 聂珍钊、王松林主编:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》,北京:北京大学出版社,2020年,第 14 页。

人的欲望和潜意识的作用,将人外在行为的内在驱动力全部"归结于欲望、冲动、恐惧、渴望、幻想和记忆等生理活动"(聂珍钊 王松林 122),或者只注重"以形式主义的方法向后推求文学作品的原初类型"(聂珍钊 王松林 129),呈现出非伦理的理论建构。与之不同,文学伦理学批评更加关注理性意志对自由意志的引导和约束作用,主张在人类产生伦理意识之后,包括文学创作、文学阅读在内的人类活动的根本动力来源于对摆脱伦理混乱、走向伦理秩序的渴望,其根本目的是获得用以指导物质生活和精神生活的道德启示。可以说,文学伦理学批评弥补了精神分析学理论的缺陷,纠正了其对伦理意识和道德教诲的忽视和贬低。

在文学与脑科学的跨学科研究方面,文学伦理学批评重视人的头脑在道 德研究中占有的核心地位,但排斥神经伦理学(neuroethics)等新兴学科的 部分主张,例如对道德脑区的过渡追寻、对道德源自生物进化的设想、对自 由意志的除點以及对道德病的治疗等,认为这些主张或可导致道德的庸俗化 和道德歧视的产生,引起不道德行为的发生以及人丧失行动主体性等后果。 为此,文学伦理学批评提出"脑文本"(brain text)这一术语,用以解决将 脑科学技术运用到人类精神和思维活动研究时可能导致的缺陷。脑文本是一 种特殊的生物形态,是人类在发明书写符号以及纸张之前储存信息的文本形 式,是人的大脑以记忆形式保存的对于世界客观事物的感知、认知、理解和 思考。<sup>1</sup>基于此,文学伦理学批评进一步提出文学文本论,认为文本是文学的 基本载体,没有文本便没有文学,文本按载体的不同可分为脑文本、书写文 本和电子文本三种形式。可以说,"脑文本"的提出一方面夯实了文学伦理 学批评的理论基础,另一方面还给予伦理学与脑科学的跨学科研究以有效的 补充和超越,表现在:把人们的兴趣点从寻找道德脑区的物质定位转移到思 考头脑的伦理功能;重视伦理选择以纠正道德进化说隐含的道德歧视;强调 人性因子对兽性因子的主导作用从而避免以生物学因素为藉端实施非道德行 为; 提倡用文学的道德教诲功能指导人们的伦理生活, 表现出鲜明的伦理立 场和人文关怀。

在文学与语言学的跨学科研究方面,文学伦理学批评批判地吸收了索绪尔(Ferdinand de Saussure)、萨丕尔(Edward Sapir)、乔姆斯基(Noam Chomsky)等语言学家的观点,基于重要术语"脑文本"重新定义了语言、声音、文字、文本等概念。文学伦理学批评不赞同大多数语言学家将语言看作人类的天赋,亦或者是视为表达思想的符号系统的观点,认为这些观点"只注意到了语言同声音的联系","把声音看成语言符号,而不是看成语言的载体,更不是把声音看成是文本生成的语言的形态"(聂珍钊,"论语言生成的伦理机制" 96),从而忽视了语言作为声音载体的本质和可以实时生成的特点。为此,文学伦理学批评提出语言生成论,主张语言不是先在的

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:口头文学与脑文本",《外国文学研究》3(2013):8-15。

符号体系,而是脑文本的声音形态。人把保存在大脑中的脑文本通过发音器官转换成声音,即生成语言。所以,"口头表达的内容不是语言,而是保存在我们大脑中的脑文本","发音器官通过声音把脑文本表达出来的过程就是语言生成的过程"(聂珍钊,"论语言生成的伦理机制" 97)。基于以上逻辑,文学伦理学批评提出文字是脑文本的书写形态的观点,并进一步提出了文学物质论,主张文学在本质上是一种物质形态,而不是"意识形态"。

在文学与科学技术的跨学科研究方面,文学伦理学批评敏锐地捕捉到基因技术、人工智能、人机接口、认知神经、互联网络、数字经济、移动终端、量子通讯等科学技术,不仅影响甚至主导人们的生活,还促成了人文与科技的快速融合,"导致文学研究转变为科学研究,出现了以科学为主导的跨学科研究转向"(聂珍钊,"文学跨学科发展——论科技与人文学术研究的革命" 35)。为此,文学伦理学批评选择顺应时代潮流,广泛开展以科学为主导的跨学科研究。不仅在基础理论研究层面提出"科学选择"这一术语,用以完整解释人类文明发展进程并做出展望,同时还注重考察文学跨学科研究发展总趋势、人文研究与科学技术融合的可能性、作家危机和文学危机等诸多重要问题,积极推进文学理论的科学化,即文学理论的科学重构。借助科学技术开展跨学科研究,强调文学与相关学科研究互鉴的重要性,以实现文学理论体系的创新与重建。1

文学伦理学批评理论基础的跨学科性质决定了它的批评术语的跨学科性质,同时也决定了它的术语体系的动态性特征。特别是,伴随着科学技术的进步、人类认知水平的提高,文学伦理学批评术语体系的动态性特征表现得尤为突出。这无疑是合乎人类认知规律的,因为术语系统反映认知过程,而认知过程始终与不断发展的客观现象并进。文学伦理学批评尊重术语体系建构的自身逻辑和发展规律,拒绝走僵化、封闭的道路,立足文学发展需要和现实规定性,以术语创新带动话语体系创新,继而带动观点创新和理论创新。

#### 文学伦理学批评跨学科话语体系构建

文学伦理学批评是与时俱进的理论,必将沿着它所提出的人类文明三阶段论的发展方向不断演进,以使自身理论体系和话语体系趋于完善。而事实上,由于既有理论体系先天的跨学科性质,同时也是为了适应"前科学选择"阶段人类表达伦理的需要以及文学批评的需要,文学伦理学批评早在21世纪初期就颇具前瞻性地提出,要把具有鲜明跨学科特色的文学基础理论创新和话语体系建构,作为当前以及未来相当一段时间内的发展重心。2017年8月,国际文学伦理学批评研究会第七届年会在英国伦敦举办,这次年会最显著的特色就是首次将"文学伦理学批评与跨学科研究"作为大会主题。接

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊:"文学跨学科发展——论科技与人文学术研究的革命",《外国文学研究》2(2021):31-43。

下来的第八届日本年会、第九届杭州年会、第十届北京年会虽子议题各有侧重但始终保持"文学伦理学批评与跨学科研究"的大会主题不变。纵观近20年发展历程,文学伦理学批评表现出善于从历史经验中汲取智慧力量、勇于在时代潮流中把握发展方向的卓越学术品质,以扎实的批评实践引领学术风向,促进学术发展。

与此同时,文学伦理学批评也深刻意识到理论体系与话语体系的辩证关系。理论体系是话语体系的支撑和思想来源,话语体系是理论体系的外在表达形式,依托理论体系得以立基。而术语作为话语体系基础概念和范畴的语言标记,对于完善话语体系本身和完善理论体系具有重要意义。就文学伦理学批评跨学科研究而言,其首要和重要任务是展开对术语的研究,在对其他学科术语再定义、再解释、再表达的基础上,做好文学伦理学批评跨学科术语的挖掘、创新、阐释和应用工作,按照伦理学、哲学、语言学、心理学、生理学、自然科学等术语的分类,建构起文学伦理学批评跨学科话语体系的知识框架与语义基础。实际上,借用不同学科的术语实际就是借助不同学科的理论和方法用以文学研究,这比在文学领域内寻找文学研究方法或实现文学理论突破更为有效。特别是,在科学技术飞速发展的"前科学选择"阶段,以科学技术为引领的文学跨学科研究必将成为文学研究主流。

然而,话语体系是一个建构、传播、理解、认可的过程。在全球化、 多元化、信息化的时代,建构文学伦理学批评跨学科话语体系首先要明确话 语体系的功能定位问题,即要立足文学,服务文学,形成有利于总结文学跨 学科发展经验、解释文学跨学科理论架构、指导文学跨学科批评实践的话语 体系;其次,要注重学术和内容创新,避免为话语而话语,为跨学科而跨学 科,防止出现以空洞概念术语代替实质性内容和思想的伪创新;最后,还要 切实拓展话语平台、增加传播渠道、增强话语表达的感召力、公信力,提高 文学伦理学批评理论的国际传播力和影响力。只有建构符合文学发展规律和 现实规定性的、鲜活的、具有说服力的话语体系,才能真正体现文学伦理学 批评理论的创新性、示范性、优越性,才能真正达到学科贯通、美美与共的 学术"大同"境界。

为进一步推进文学伦理学批评跨学科话语体系建构,《世界文学研究论坛》编辑部筹备一年之久推出 2022 年度特刊暨《第十届国际文学伦理学批评研究会年会论文集》。「本次特刊文章既包括对文学伦理学批评基础理论和主要观点的探讨,又涵盖对核心术语如伦理环境、伦理身份(choice identity)、伦理选择、伦理两难(choice dilemma)、伦理禁忌、自由意志、理性意志、伦理意识等的应用,表现出跨时代、跨国别、跨文化、跨文类、跨学科的研究特色。特别是在文学跨学科研究方面,特刊文章广泛涉及文学与政治学、文学与历

<sup>1</sup> 本期特刊受国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"(项目批号: 19ZDA292)资助。

史学、文学与心理学、文学与生理学、文学与绘画、文学与影视以及文学与科技的交叉与互鉴,准确捕捉文学研究领域以科学为主导的跨学科转向,敢于探讨人文研究与科学研究相融合的可能性及其路径。其中,郭紫薇以"末世纪还读诗吗?"的伦理诘问探寻马华文学中人工智能对人类生活的介入以及对人类社会契约和伦理规范的冲击;朱新竹关注到加拿大作家玛格丽特·阿特伍德《羚羊与秧鸡》中的性别化科技问题,主张科技不应沦为父权的统治工具;林雪琪和朴宰雨聚焦克隆技术或可带来的伦理混乱和克隆人的悲剧命运,以惩恶扬善的伦理功能为牵引考察韩国科幻文学发展史;许静华则认为日本作家安部公房的《第四间冰期》深刻揭露了科技产物与政治的共谋关系以及二者践踏个人利益乃至生命的暴力性等。特刊文章普遍注重文学跨学科研究的思维创新、方法创新、观念创新,为学界提供了运用文学伦理学批评理论开展跨学科研究的良好范例。

人文精神与科学精神是人类文明的重要标志,二者相互促进、相互依存。 只有两种思维方式互补才构成完整的人类思想,也才能够保证发展实践的正确取向和成功。对二者互补性的强调体现在文学研究领域,即导致以科学为主导的跨学科研究转向。有鉴于此,文学伦理学批评尊重人类文明演进规律和文学发展规律,顺应时代潮流和时代之需,选择坚定不移地走文学的跨学科研究道路,这无疑是经得起历史检验的正确的伦理选择。而且,文学伦理学批评不止于探讨文学跨学科研究的可能性与路径,还倡导在科学引领下凝聚众智绘制文学基础理论跨学科研究蓝图以及建立科学文学理论新架构,为文学跨学科研究树立典范。

#### **Works Cited**

- 蒋承勇: "跨学科互涉与文学研究方法创新", 《社会科学文摘》9(2020): 103-105。
- [Jiang Chenyong. "Interdisciplinary Interrelation and Innovation of Literary Research Methods." *Social Sciences Digest* 9 (2020): 103-105.]
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语",《外国文学研究》1(2010):12-22。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2010): 12-22.]
- 一一: "文学伦理学批评:口头文学与脑文本",《外国文学研究》3(2013):8-15。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Oral Literature and Brain Text." Foreign Literature Studies 3 (2013): 8
  -15.]
- ——: "论语言生成的伦理机制",《上海交通大学学报(哲学社会科学版)》3(2020): 87-101。
- [—. "Ethical Mechanism of Language Generation." Journal of Shanghai Jiaotong University (Philosophy and Social Sciences) 3 (2020): 87-101.]

- ——: "文学跨学科发展——论科技与人文学术研究的革命",《外国文学研究》2(2021): 31-43。
- [—. "The Interdisciplinary Development of Literature: The Revolution of Science and Technology and Academic Research in Humanities." *Foreign Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 31-43.]
- 一一: 《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020): 71-92+205-206。
- [—. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." *Social Sciences in China* 10 (2020): 71-92+205-206.]
- 聂珍钊 王松林主编: 《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin, eds. *Ethical Literary Criticism: A Theoretical Study*. Beijing: Peiking UP, 2020.]
- 杨革新: "从伦理选择到科学选择: 文学伦理学批评的理论逻辑",《文学跨学科研究》3(2022): 416-425。
- [Yang Gexin, "From Ethical Selection to Scientific Selection: The Theoretical Logic of Ethical Literary Criticism." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 2 (2022): 416-425.]

## Poetry-reading in the End Times?—AIs, Human States of Being and the "Overman" in Malaysian Chinese Literature

#### Florence Kuek

Abstract: Yale literature critic J. H. Miller's rather prophetic claim that "the end of literature is at hand" draws attention to the impact of new creative writings, including algorithm texts. In 2021, the father of Ethical literary criticism, Chinese Prof. Nie Zhenzhao and his colleagues discussed extensively the ethical conflicts and repercussions of scientific advancements that affect humans, artificial intelligence (AI), and post-humans. Against the phasing out of literature, Nie Zhenzhao instead argues for the incorporation and development of new literary forms, functions and values which have invariably emerged with the ubiquitious use of technology in the twenty-first century. In Southeast Asia, Malaysian Chinese writers started dealing with sci-fi and robotic themes in the literary periodical Chao Foon in 1979, triggering thought-provoking discourses on potential dilemmas and ethical issues involving one's identity, consciousness and choice. This article examines the preeminence of AIs in Woon Swee Tin's Tianlangxing Shixuan, defamiliarization of languages in Looi Yook Tho's futuristic poetry "Moshiji Yuyan", man's alienation in Lew Yok Long's science fiction "Beifen", omnipresence of an AI female in King Ban Hui's Rengong Shaonu and the ethical appeals of "overmans" in Ho Sok Fong's Lake Like a Mirror. It highlights the tension between science and ethics in Malaysian Chinese literature and celebrates man's own inner conscious attempts to form a better world and humane society, in the face of the creation and empowerment of increasingly invincible and amoral AIs by their insatiable human programmers.

**Keywords:** ethical literary criticism; ethical consciousness; AI; sci-fi; end times; Malaysian Chinese literature

**Author: Florence Kuek** is Senior Lecturer at the Department of Chinese Studies, University of Malaya. She specializes in Malaysian literature, translation of literature, and educational research. This article is sponsored by University Malaya Research Grant: PV046-2022 (Email: florencekuek@um.edu.my).

标题: 末世纪还读诗吗?——马华文学中的 AI、人类生存状态与"超人"内容摘要: 耶鲁大学文学评论家 J·H·米勒的前瞻性警戒"文学就要终结了"让文学研究者不能不留意新时代的文本,包括人工智能计算文本。文学伦理学批评之父聂珍钊教授与同僚紧密关注科技发展对人类、机器人及后人类所带来的伦理冲突和隐忧。聂氏提出了与文学终结论相反的看法,认为应该回应 21 世纪的科技发展,建构及发展新的文学形式、开发新的文学功能及价值。在东南亚,马华作家于 1979 年的《蕉风 313》已推出"科幻作品专号",让写作人及读者接触科幻和机器人题材,思考伦理身份、伦理意识和伦理选择等课题。本文尝试从温任平主编的《天狼星科幻诗选》多篇诗作中对 AI介入人类生活的警觉、吕育陶《末世纪寓言》对语言陌生化的思考、刘育龙《备份》对科幻文学中"人"的异化和物化的窥探,龚万辉《人工少女》对可以超越时间恒常存在的 AI 女儿的眷恋,以及贺淑芳《湖面如镜》中"超人"意象的伦理索求,视察马华文学中科技与伦理的角力。在电脑程序员不断研发能力更加强大、却不谙人类社会契约与伦理规范的人工智能的新时代,马华文学作品一再地点亮能够为人类创造出更人性社会的内在良知。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;伦理意识;人工智能;科幻;末世纪;马华文学作者简介:郭紫薇,马来亚大学中文系高级讲师,研究专业为马来西亚文学、文学翻译与教育研究。本文为马来亚大学短期研究项目【项目批号:PV046-2022】阶段性成果。

#### Introduction

Artificial intelligence (AI) has now become ubiquitous and redefined many areas of life. Substantial progress in language processing, machine learning, pattern recognition influences different fields and is generally welcomed, but its infiltration into the realm of arts and aesthetics has alarmed many who have voiced concerns. However, it is certain that AI will prevail and remain dominant. The improved algorithm, coupled with either supervised or unsupervised machine learning will play an increasingly important role in the arts and in the creative sphere of human activities.

Many poems have been written by AI algorithms and quite a number have even managed to pass the Turing test and "trick" readers into believing that they were written by human writers. For instance, in 2011, an AI poem produced by Zachary Scroll, "For the Bristlecone Snag" was accepted by *The Archive*, Duke University's literary journal. The poem is as follows:

A home transformed by the lightning

the balanced alcoves smother
this insatiable earth of a planet, Earth.
They attached it with mechanical horns
because they love you, love, in fire and wind.
You say, what is the time waiting for in its spring?
I tell you it is waiting for your branch that flows,
because you are a sweet-smelling diamond architecture
that does not know why it grows. (30-31)

At first glance, and even with repeated reading, the poem seemed "deep" with poetic imagery and its structure of expression. However, it quickly frustrated readers when they realized it was not written by a human. This raises questions, of whether there is any "meaning" in reading poetry generated by AI, whether an AI robot or machine can assume an "identity" to communicate "feelings" and convey the most delicate "soul language" like a human. More seriously, does this resonate with the prophetic statement made by Yale literature critic J. H. Miller (2002) that "the end of literature is at hand," and that "literature's time is almost up?"

Miller's treatise has triggered lively debates among Chinese scholars in view of the increasingly marginal status of literature, as reported by Zhu Liyuan in "Hillis Miller on the end of literature." Acknowledging the increasingly important role of new media and AI, Prof Nie Zhenzhao, a proponent of Ethical literary criticism, calls for literary theories to incorporate science and technology in mainstream poetic discourse <sup>1</sup>. Refuting the proposition that literature is ending, Nie Zhenzhao asserts that the forms, functions and value of man's literature will prevail through time and tides. The 10<sup>th</sup> International Convention on Ethical Literary Criticism, organized by the International Association of Ethical Literary Criticism (IAELC) between 16-17 October 2021, also addressed the philosophical and ethical dimensions of literature in the age of AI.

#### **Engagement with AI literature by Proponents of Ethical Literary Criticism**

The early engagement of ethical literary critics with AI in literature generally reflects a tone of openness, yet not without ambiguity. For instance, in her book *An Ethical Literary Criticism on Clones in Sci-Fi Novels*, scholar Guo Wen (2019) defines a "clone" as a product (or rather, a creature) that ranges between a technological item and a "being" bearing the ethics and nature of mankind" (Guo

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: "文学跨学科发展 ——论科技与人文学术研究的革命",《外国文学研究》 2 (2021): 31-42。

2). Nie Zhenzhao (2019), in his preface to the book, poses a compelling question on AIs and robotic beings, asserting that "[...] an ethical issue (arises) when the subject identity is unclear" (Guo Preface 5). Li Ling (2015), in her Master of Arts (MA) thesis, takes a bolder stand when framing the consciousness of man-made sapiens creatures. She sees the self-destruction of Victor Frankenstein in the ending of this gothic fiction of Mary Shelley as an inevitable, "conscious" choice of the subject since Frankenstein's existence will be rejected by human society, as the text suggests.

Researchers have continued to examine the subject matter through the lenses of Ethical literary criticism and provided new insights into human's coexistence with AIs, androids, clones or cybots. Technically, each of these terms may differ in definition due to the differing interpretation and reach of "human behavioral analytics", or, in the layman language, human emotions-like quality. However, they trigger lively debates in the discussion of AI literature. Wang Songlin (2021) and his co-researchers ask whether the clones are able to form a society since they lack individual identity, i.e., the "Who am I?" self-identification. Unraveling the technological utopianism, they point out the absence of differentiating features or distinctions between a clone and another. Liu Jing (2021), in her criticism of Philip Dick's Do Androids Dream of Electric Sheep? (1968) asserts that "androids" are fundamentally different from normal human beings as the algorithms that program them cannot replicate human brain text and processing. The androids, thus, lack the ethical consciousness that humans possess. Duan Mengyue (2021), analyzing Kazuo Ishiguro's Klara and the Sun, highlights the uncertain attribute of the robotic "heart" in Klara, unlike the human heart. Subsequently, she reinstates the attributes of love and compassion as the cornerstones for human civilization to thrive on. These treatises are consistent with the general undertone of earlier criticisms on scifi literature that underscores ethics and human rationality as the desirable qualities over the lurking darker side of humans governed by "the jungle rule" as elaborated in the article by Ling Mei (2018) and her team of researchers that discusses Liu Cixin's sci-fi novel The Three Body. Among these ethical literary critics, Lu Chao (2021) seems to be the most receptive of the age of AIs and the potential future world of cybots. His study on the literary trend indicates the acceptance of cybots as post-humans. He thus proposes openly embracing the symbiosis and coexistence of humans-cybots, arguing that it is a natural result of man's scientific endeavors.

#### Als in the First Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology by Malaysian Chinese Writers

In his literary critique during an international conference in 2015 on the theme of

"The Sirius Poetry Society and Modernism" organised by Universiti Tunku Abdul Rahman, Malaysia, Associate Professor Dr Lee Soo Chee defined the characteristics of sci-fi literature as works that are logical, aligned with reality in human life but also futuristic in nature so that mankind could find "salvation" and seek deliverance from impending disaster (Lee 85). Lee's characteristics were adapted from Holman and Harmon's (1986) definition for sci-fi novels in *A Handbook to Literature*.

Edited by Woon Swee Tin (a.k.a., Wen Renping), the publication of *Tianlangxing Kehuan Shixuan (Sirius Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology)* in 2015 showcased the fascination with sci-fi by 20 Malaysian Chinese writers affiliated to Tianlangxing Shishe (Sirius Poetry Guild), known for their romanticism flavour in writing style. According to Zhang Guangda (2015), the anthology was the first of its kind among Chinese writers in Malaysia, Taiwan and Hong Kong. Zhang, however, reminds readers that unlike Holman and Harmon who paid attention to sci-fi literature as early as in the 1980s, the publication of *Sirius Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology* was probably attributed to the phenomenon of "belated modernity", as the subject matter was still considered rather new then for the Chinese readership in the region.

While Zhang's assertion about the anthology might be true in that the anthology was among the first in terms of a collection of Chinese sci-fi poems, in reality, the first sci-fi literature by Malaysian Chinese writers had already been published in the fifties (Hu see electronic link; Ho 180). For instance, Yao Tuo's short story, "Qi ge shiji yihou" depicts a buried-alive mineworker who wakes up from his seven long years of deep slumber, only to realize that he is unable to communicate with the people of the time (Chao Foon 8-11). Although sci-fi literature remained on the periphery of Malaysian Chinese literature until the 1990s, it was certainly promoted, as it can be traced back to a special issue on the topic in Chao Foon, 1 a literary periodical on Malaysian Chinese literature in 1979 (ibid.). In 1979, Chao Foon (Issue 313) introduced a series of translated sci-fi short stories, translated literary criticism and a translated interview transcription with Kurt Vonnegurt, American satirical and sci-fi novelist, in its special issue on sci-fi writings. The issue also featured experimental short stories with some sci-fi elements. For instance, Tan Cheng Sin depicts the conscious self when entering into some mysterious black hole in his "Dong (The Hole)". In "Ren zhi Niaohuan (Becoming Birds)", Chai Shixin portrays

<sup>1</sup> Established in 1955, *Chao Foon* champions the promotion of Malaysian Chinese literature, a.k.a., Mahua literature, and earns itself great recognition among the Chinese-language readership in the region. Even when it stopped publication temporarily in 1999 due to operational issues, donations were made so that the periodical could be published again in 2002 until the present day. Published and distributed by the Southern University College, *Chao Foon* continues its legacy as one of the most important custodians and movers of Mahua literature.

a space traveller who lands on an unknown planet where bluebirds are spotted. Yet, some unknown forces on the planet dismember him and the birds, dissolving them into a new form of unified existence.

Nonetheless, the publication of *Sirius Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology* is hailed and much welcomed, for introducing contents that resonate with recent developments in technology, including the AIs, algorithm and AIs' self-learning ability. The anthology comprised 142 poems, arranged in authorship order. A thematic categorization of the poetry on artificial intelligence, however, will reveal a world of AI sensations amid grave concerns over the potential harm of AIs to the already illness-infested, divided and vulnerable in human society. Some examples are as follows:

	SF (AI) expressions	Concerns for the invincibility of the AIs	Concerns for the
AIs			vulnerability of
			mankind
- computer	- The rain has	- AI robots (develops	- Deadly virus (239)
- iPad	"WIFI"ed the earth	its/her own	
- Waze	(74)	consciousness, e.g.	- Loss of the
- GPS		jealousy against its/her	"source code" by
- smartwatch	- I "3D print"ed	owner's relationship	which humans
- smartphone	autumn, an autumn	with other females	were originally
- apps	together with you,	(92-93)	"programmed"
- virtual reality	my love (72)		(170)
- Lucy		- Company server	
- Big Hero 6	- If I could log onto	sending messages by	- Cosmic disaster
- self-driving car	"Google," should I	itself to all computers	e.g., Big explosion
- waiter-less,	connect to others	with messages such	(51, 63, 141, 219-
automated	via "Inter Conscious	as "I love you, I love	220)
restaurants	Net" too (69)	you, I love you, I love	
- robots		you," proclaiming its/	- Warfare e.g.,
- computer server		her admiration for	Nuclear explosion
- source code		its/her creator – the	
- memory chip		programmer (168)	

In the preface to the anthology, Woon (2015) describes the exciting experience of poets dwelling in a realm of new language codes, creations capable of "turning impossibility into some new possibilities [...] and awaking any old souls" (20).

He also reminds readers that the goals of sci-fi and AI poetry writing are never to embark on "grotesqueness" but to engage the changing boundless world (ibid). Published about a year after celebrating World's Poet Day 2013, the collection clearly shows the poets engaging with 21<sup>st</sup> century human living, in a world that has been infiltrated by AI inventions.

#### Consciousness of the AIs

One of the ethical concerns in the anthology is a lurking fear of the potential "self"-consciousness of the AIs: What if the AI robots creepily develop their own consciousness, and involuntarily harbour feelings for or against humans?

Zhou Weiqi's "Wo de Geren Zhuli Poeticia (My Personal Assistant Poeticia)" underlines this grave concern:

[...]
Poeticia's my personal assistant
"She" – that's right, she's what you'd call my female secretary
Except her functions are all-encompassing
[...]
I've begun to regret, how I wish to delete her poetry-writing program
But I've got to consider her wants and feelings
Her jealousy when I get too close
To certain female colleagues
'Tis a disaster of artificial intelligence, a personality of
spontaneous creation
She's even a mechanism of self-defence, and so
I must not offend her
[...]

In this poem, Poeticia was created to assist the persona who programmed her to write poems. However, her "intelligence" becomes problematic, causing her creator cum persona – "I" – to "regret" granting her the artificial life since she starts to cross the relationship boundaries by being jealous of the relationships her master has with female co-workers. What worries her "maker" or "programmer: even more is her seemingly growing ability to self-learn and have her own defence mechanism again emotional pain: "Unhappy, off she goes, without a trace" (Ibid, p. 92). The

<sup>1</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original poem available in Woon Swee Tin ed., *Tianlangxing kehuan shixuan*. (2015): 92-94.

poem ends with the poet's silent lament and regret: "Alas, I can only look back to that year, 2014 / To my cute, stupid *n*th-generation iPhone" (ibid 93).

#### Invincibility of the AIs

In Woon's "Youmo: Wo zai Taikongshuo li (Day's End: I, in the Space Shuttle)", he depicts an amicable interaction between humans and AI robots in the space shuttle:

Hands and feet in coordination, the robot gathers up a pile of capsules I'm swimming in the air, and it too
"Give me five," our palms touch
In truth I still get confused, among all those colourful pills
Which ones are food
Which ones are medicine <sup>1</sup>

Another concern raised in the anthology is a nagging anxiety about the potential invincibility of AI. There are no safeguards for humans from the unknown dimensions of AI, especially regarding what *they* might be capable of doing or inflicting upon human lives. Cheng Kexin's "Lovestruck Server," depicts a server that has "fallen in love" with its female programmer. In its "expression of love," it is able to command every single computer screen in town to display its "love language." To the girl, its programmer, this repeated message pops up: "I love you, I love you, I love you, I love you."

The Internet was especially slow that day
Text messages of unknown again
Infiltrated the entire city, saying
I love you, I love you, I love you, I love you
When technical support finally tracked it down
They found a server
Deeply in love with
The girl – its programmer <sup>2</sup>

In the anthology, poet Qianmo's "Lucy" was written as his response to a French sci-fi film of the same title directed by Luc Besson. The movie features Lucy, the protagonist, who transforms into a killer with psychokinetic abilities due to the

<sup>1</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original poem available in Woon Swee Tin ed., (2015): 179.

<sup>2</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original poem available in Woon Swee Tin ed., (2015): 168.

psychedelic drugs inserted into her abdomen by drugs traffickers. The gory part of Lucy is her ability to murder with invisible arms using her brain powers, killing with her thoughts alone.

Responding to the eerie depiction of Lucy in the Luc Besson's rendition, Qianmo's "Lucy" proclaims her ruthless invisibility and omniscience:

My mind
Reaches to the heights of Babel
Yet God
Has not scattered my body
What's scattered are my escalating powers
Forming Superman, X-Men, Spider-Man [...]
A multitude of superpowers reside within me
I claim my throne
I summon the wind and rain
I cast my intellect
As I will!
How do I tell you
That I am
Now
The entire universe!

#### Source Code Analogy and Human Existence

In the anthology, Cheng Keqin's "Life's Source Code," uses the analogy of software programming to portray the trajectory of the life of a man, posing a philosophical question on whether one's inability to rewrite one's life chapters comes from the loss of one's "source code." The eight-line poem of hers though brief, is thought-provoking:

Life is a program
Stored in computer from other space and times
One time it crashed by accident, and lost
Its source code
Unable to reverse the past
Unable to control the future

<sup>1</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original poem available in Woon Swee Tin ed., (2015): 204-205.

Reboot the program, and whatever still runs Fatalism <sup>1</sup>

While Cheng's poem attempts to relate the "source code" to the unchallengeable inevitability of one's life, it certainly refers to the natural course of human history that could constitute any "what ifs." Given an opportunity to alter the "source code," will human history turn out better? The profound source code analogy in Cheng's has undeniably taken the dimensions of AI poems to another level altogether.

#### AI Literature and Defamiliarization of Language

More than a decade before Woon published the Sirius Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology (2015), Looi Yook Tho, the "prince of poets" among Malaysian Chinese poetry writers, compiled and published his futuristic poetry anthology entitled Zai Wo Wanneng de Xiangxiang Wangguo (In My Wonderful Imaginary Kingdom) in 1999.

His "Mo Shiji Yuyan (End Times Prophecy)" in the anthology portrays the irony and potential sorry state of human life in an artificial world: "Reading funny articles composed by the computer/[...]/ Through high resolution screens / We salvage the moonlight" And he asked, "Is this our only joy in life?" (31)

One of the key features of Looi's writing style is the defamiliarization of language in his poems. Shklovsky (2017) sees defamiliarization in art creation as a measure to prevent over-automatization and discourage one's trained or habitual functioning. Looi is adept at this. In "End Times Prophecy," Looi advances his cynicism against vices such as greed, lust and the materialistic nature of the modern man using unfamiliar sci-fi or AI elements and estranged expressions (Zhang, see electronic link). The defamiliarization in his poems includes the portrayals of drones occupying the sky in the place of falcons, lush green pine forests, created by synthesizer simulators, humans purifying themselves through reformatting chips in their brains and so forth. Looi aptly presents to the readers a bizarre world of ordinary words or objects turned unfamiliar. Even the legal system in his supposedly simulated world of Africa is rather unusual, in which the punishment for "those who cannot love" is "to kiss the lions." A selected quote is as follows:

"I said, 'In Africa, only in Africa
Could I build
A kingdom governed by love
Where those who cannot love are sent to kiss the lions'

<sup>1</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original poem available in Woon Swee Tin ed., (2015): 170.

It [the robot RV-2400] blinked its electronic eyes and said, 'Humans need to relearn speech and writing
Cast aside the guns and switches
And live with the beasts[...] "'
Then it started to play a soft lullaby
As I descended into the wails of a newborn infant[...] 1

The first cry of a human baby symbolizes purity and innocence. Here, Looi creates a paradoxical shift, assigning the didactic roles to AI, instead of humans. It is rather ironic to come across the lines in his "End Times Prophecy" where humans need to be reminded by AI about their unpretentious, unsophisticated nature at the beginning. In the pursuit to become more tech-savvy, AI-dependent and market relevant, humans might trade off who they are and what is good for them. The defamiliarization of language in Looi's "End Times Prophecy" has definitely created a sense of estrangement on readers, meeting what Darko Suvin (2014) defines as the literature of cognitive estrangement.

#### AIs, Human States of Being and Ethics

While developing AI themes in their literary works, Malaysian Chinese writers address pertinent ethical issues and the states of being for humans. AI is seen as posthuman or metaman by Woon's literary critics<sup>2</sup>. In critical theories, posthumans are humans or half-humans who may exist in a state beyond humans. Robert Pepperell (2003)'s The Posthuman Condition regards posthumans as human beings whose physiques and minds are well-wired to the technological world. In his 'The Posthuman Manifesto,' he writes, "Humanists saw themselves as distinct beings, in an antagonistic relationship with their surroundings. Posthumans, on the other hand, regard their own being as embodied in an extended technological world" (Pepperell 8). However, Pepperell credits the forerunner of futuristic writing on human biological merger with technology to Norbert Wiener back in 1989, and Capek's R.U.R. in the early part of the twentieth century when ideas such as post-biological, transhuman and/or post-Darwinian stage of human development were boldly proposed (ibid 161). Other scholars who developed the "posthuman" concept further include N. Katherine Hayles, Allucquere Roseanne Stone, Judith Halberstam, Ira Livingston, Scott Bukatman, Anne Balsamo and N. Katherine Hayles (ibid).

<sup>1</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original poem available in Looi Yok Tho, *Zai wo wanneng de xiangxiang guodu [In my wonderful imaginary kingdom]*, (1999): 34-35.

<sup>2</sup> 参见温任平主编:《天狼科幻诗选》,霹雳州安顺:有加出版社,2015年,第18页。

Zheng Yuelei's poem "her-his life," in the *Sirius Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology* edited by Woon, projects a subtle love relationship between a man and his 12-inch Retina-screen:

With the stillness of a portrait
He and she, two people conversing
Motionless and static
She and he, in silent mode
At times telepathically, and at times
In HD voices
Communicating, gazing upon each other
All through
A 12-inch Retina-screen
The resolution clear and stable
As is best <sup>1</sup>

This 11-line poem by Zheng was inspired by Spike Jonze's sci-fi film in 2013 about Theodore and his AI virtual assistant Samantha's amicable relationship. The director conceived the idea from his earlier reflections over the possibilities of instant messaging between individuals through AI programming in the early 2000s. While Zheng's poem only portrays the companionship, "she" (the AI) offers her human master. The original movie "her" explores the potential of AI in inappropriately influencing their human masters into making ethical choices such as the solutions to Theodore's sexual needs, his legal relationship with the ex-wife, his interest in the next-door-girl Catherine and so forth. To begin with, his getting "consultation" from the AI is already problematic. On what grounds could AIs guide humans on life issues pertaining to ethics and moral decisions?

To probe into human's ethical consciousness and state of being, "Beifen (Copy)", a troubling short story by Malaysian Chinese writer Lew Yok Long is discussed here. This *copy* that comes into existence either through genetic cloning from its "original," or programmed accordingly through artificial intelligence, somehow replicates human's fear of death. Besides, like any human who wants to be heard and known, *it* does not want to be put on the shelf and remain as a "back-up" indefinitely. Hence, *it* murders the "original" to earn itself a place and an identity in the community. However, the guilt from the crime *it* has committed haunts its conscience at all times. Eventually, *it* gets killed by another *copy* for there are

<sup>1</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original poem available in Woon Swee Tin ed., (2015): 197.

actually multiple copies around.

- "I am in fear of losing my life [...] disappearing all of a sudden like him."
- "I want to prolong my existence (on earth) as far as possible."
- "I eliminated (murdered) *him*, taking over *his* identity, social status, wealth, and his nagging sense of insecurity, and an anxiety that I could never shed it off."

"I am always on guard and keeping myself alert [...]"

"One day I bumped into a stranger as soon as I left a bakery [...] as I was helping the person to get up from the ground, he fired at me using two pistols [...] The biggest surprise for me was when his beret dropped off – I saw another *me*."

"I was not *his* only copy; maybe not his first copy either [...] as I breathed my last, I found out what I never knew about *him*."

In the story, the "Copy" is very disturbed by the transient nature of life. If life was so vulnerable that it was not possible to take a single strike, anyone could die at any time without a good reason, life would have no meaning after all, it reasons. Ironically, even so, the "Copy" still craves to live on. *It* seeks out all means to ensure its safety to prolong the length of its days on earth, including the duplication of itself:

"I do not board on airplanes or go on cruises. I don't take any trains or drive. I will only go on foot, on bikes when necessary. I try avoid using public transportation."

"I arm myself with two guns day in day out."

"I develop a habit to keep a copy for everything [...] file documents, correspondences, books, first-day cover (FDC)s, computer database, two guns, two girlfriends – I even keep a copy of myself." <sup>2</sup>

Beyond legal and civic implications, Lew's "Copy" reveals an extreme case of man's alienation from his community, and life itself.

<sup>1</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original story is available in Lew Yok Long, "Beifen [Copy Xinma wenque gaotie zhi weixing xiaoshuo [Singapore-Malaysia literature high-speed rails: short stories] ]", edited by Liu, R., & Chen, Z. Singapore: Malaysian Writers Association of Chinese Medium-Singapore Association of Writers. (2017): 158-159.

<sup>2</sup> Translated by the writer of this paper. Original story is available in Lew Yok Long, ibid, 158.

### Time Reference and Omnipresence of AI

Permeating with the undertone of escapism and fluid temporariness, the newly published novel *Rengong Shaonu* (*Ririka* 2022) by talented Malaysian Chinese writer King Banhui depicts human's vulnerability in the face of catastrophic destruction of planet earth and the reign of endless darkness. In his overlapping, multi-layered narrative, even "Time" wanders off its orbit (King 247), bringing everything down to ground zero. Hence, like a poetic writer who has received the omen of the impending end times, King foretells how "darkness like a gigantic whale, swallows up light with one bite" (ibid. 262), that "the whole world, sunk into utter darkness without any caution and in just a blink of the eyes" (ibid. 265-266). Ironically, *Ririka*, the AI girl, supposedly created to be the "daughter" of the protagonist, eventually will become a witness to time, and will stay through time even after the great destruction of the planet: "Ririka, I'm sorry that I will perish in the river of time one day [...] (but) you will be the only one to meet eternity" (ibid. 277).

Interesting, despite the seemingly "immortality" of AIs, evident in those left behind, imperishable AI sexbots after the extinction of humans at the city ruins, King asserts that the "behavioral traits" of AIs could easily be altered provided their algorithm is erased or reprogrammed (ibid.120). The memory of an AI is therefore dramatically different from that of a human, or a mammal. "The memory of an elephant will not falter" (37), wrote King. And so, the memory of a human mother who has lost her new born, the memory of an old, wasted man who has had a bitter jungle life with the underground members of the Malayan Communist Party<sup>2</sup>, and the memory of the dreadful, closely monitored life of the Chinese ethnic in the "new villages" shall stay in the psyche of Malaysian Chinese, and their literature, even as time and tides slip away. Malaysian Chinese scholar Fan Pik Wah (2011) points out that the cruelty endured by Chinese communities in new villages during the Malayan Emergency deeply frustrated a generation of people who had pledged

<sup>1</sup> All quotes were translated from its Chinese texts in the novel by the writer of this paper.

<sup>2</sup> The Malayan Communist Party (MCP) was a Marxist–Leninist and anti-imperialist establishment that was active in Malaya between 1930-1989. Most remembered for their strong resistance against the Japanese Occupation during the World War II, and their anti-imperialist guerilla movements against the colonial British government, the MCP finally surrendered themselves and was dissolved for good after signing the peace agreements with Malaysian government on 2 December 1989.

<sup>3</sup> The Chinese New Villages were established by the colonial government during the Malayan Emergency (1948-1960). The enclosed communities lived within barbed wire and watch towers. Such establishments were part of the Briggs Plan to exterminate any connection between the guerrillas and their supporters.

their loyalty to the land, as reflected in *Shuda Genshen* (*Deeply Rooted* 1985), the second novel in the "Malayan trilogy" by Fang Beifang (1918-2007), the patriarch of Malaysian Chinese literature.

### Superman / Overman and the Consciousness Beyond

Even in the age of AI and World Wide Web, human society will still evolve around man's physical, emotional and spiritual needs, as long proposed in Maslow's hierarchy of needs theory. While endorsing the co-existence and co-living with AI, man's biggest needs are still beyond what AI could meet, and that was aptly concluded by Lew Yok Long (1999) in his critique on the gist of engagement with sci-fi elements in Malaysian Chinese literature. It leads to an examination on the states of human beings and ethical appeals in the award-winning literary work by internationally acclaimed Malaysian Chinese writer Ho Sok Fong.

Winner of the English Pen Award 2020, Ho's short story anthology *Lake Like A Mirror* (2020) portrays the lives of nine women who are living their lives in difficult circumstances, apathy or slow death, and calls for one's resilience and moral strength to soldier on. Interestingly, some of her characters or supporting characters seem to assume some qualities of "superman" or "overman" as people persevere even under very challenging life conditions.

The concept of "Superman" (Übermensch) first appeared in Nietzsche's *Thus Spoke Zarathustra*:

"I teach you the superman. Man is something that should be overcome. What have you done to overcome him? All creatures hitherto have created something beyond themselves: and do you want to be the ebb of this great tide and return to the animals rather than overcome man?" (Hollingdale 162)

Rejecting the transcendence or God, Nietzsche puts forth the idea of "superman" or "overman" as the "to-be" goals for humans. His notion of the "superman" should not be associated with the eugenics in Adolf Hitler's Nazism and Benito Mussolini's Fascism (ibid. 23), but in simpler terms namely, "the overcoming of the human," which relates directly to one's critical self-evaluation to become a better self (ibid. 17). It is a concept that "aims toward the spiritual growth of the individual: overcoming the human means to reconcile with our true nature and achieve mastery of oneself" (Ibid). Although the concept of *Übermensch* is rather vague, two propositions are clear: (a) that the "overman" is comprehensible, and something recommended for human experience; (b) that it is proposed for any man or woman

who wanted it, and not restricted to any specific group of people or community.

In Ho's *Lake Like a Mirror*, the ghostly character known as "the guy" in "Xiaozhen Sanyue (March in a Small Town)" is totally opposite to what an "overman" would be. Why must this man check into the guesthouse every day at the same hour, rain or shine? Why is "the guy" losing memory of what happened the day before? In the story, Cui Yi, the guesthouse attendant, tries to track down the comings and goings of this man but to no avail. The man performs the motion daily, as if pre-programmed to do so. His days do not add up to anything. Everything returns to square one each time. Such apathy in living, with no intention and energy for any progress in life is not helping anyone regrettably. Cui Yi, in the end, also leaves the town, not wanting to entertain the memory of the man.

In "The Wall", Ho depicts a woman known as "auntie" who is hemmed in her sunless kitchen due to a newly erected wall. There is no one around to understand her loneliness and withering soul. Auntie's HHHHHe self-centred husband seems to have deserted her, both physically and spiritually. Not able to stop the construction of the wall earlier, her only option might be to go through the wall to be free:

"[...] she studied herself carefully and discovered it was true: she was thin. She walked to the back door and found she was almost thin enough to squeeze through the gap [...] She pressed her emancipated palm against the wall and felt the vibrations coming through, beating against the veins on the back of her hand. She pressed her other palm to the wall and felt the fingers of both hands trembling like withered dumb cane leaves. She inched her whole body up to the wall, pressing her bony legs against it, and shook like a feathery bamboo." (Ho 6)

Unfortunately, the *auntie* in "The Wall" is losing her frame and essence each day. "She began to feel like she was in a graveyard with no one in charge and rotting corpses strewn all over the place [...] Her whole frame felt on the verge of collapse" (ibid. 6-7). The terrible living condition eventually sucks auntie up and takes her life. When one could not assert one's will like an "overman" will, one might lose one's frame and essence over time.

In "Wind Through the Pineapple Leaves and the Frangipani", Ho introduces *Bi*, an amphibious being that appears like a genie as well as an imaginary self-projection portrayed by the suffering main character Aminah, a mixed parentage girl in a religious quarantine centre. The psychologically oppressing quarantine centre would have caused any young girl to lose herself, but Aminah seizes any

opportunity to live her life without any manipulations from the religious authorities. The company or presence of Bi, albeit in her imaginations, gives her great moral support and capacity to take in life's pressures with amphibious capability:

When the wind flickers the flame, Aminah sees *Bi* hopping and dancing on the wall. The girls behind her are singing. They start out low and quiet. They only have one song. Night falls and I'm all alone, let me wash away the sin and I'll come home. In the silent night, I wash along, oh may my lusting heart be bright again. (Ho 128)

No clue is given as to why Aminah becomes pregnant and gets detained at the quarantine centre under the jurisdiction of the religious court. Being the youngest of all the women in that predicament in Ho's anthology, Aminah's fighting spirit is probably the most definitive in the sense of wanting to 'overcoming the human'. Aminah proclaims:

[...] They want me to stay here nine months. It doesn't matter to them that this will set me back a whole year behind everyone else (for school). I try to imagine the place I want to go, once I'm out. What I hoped for, a long, long time ago. No Ustaz, no warden, no one claiming to have my best interests at heart. I want to go far, far away and be reborn, like a child. I want to give birth to myself. (Ho 131)

### Conclusion

With AI becoming more invincible and starting to cross over the ethical boundaries of human living, it is high time for literature to grapple with the subject matter, paying attention to new developments as well as the reflection and re-examination of human states of being. After interviewing 300 top scientists, theoretical physicist and futurist Michio Kaku (2011) foretold in his best-seller, *Physics of the future:* How science will shape human destiny and our daily lives by year 2100, that the speedy development in technology in the 21st century would make even the greatest advancements in the last centuries insignificant. Many jobs would be taken over by AI robots. However, he also argues that there are jobs that only humans would succeed in doing, for example, jobs requiring leadership, creativity, imagination, analysis, humour and science. Above that, man's wisdom will be the priceless commodity to stay. He further asserts that humans "wield the sword of science with wisdom and equanimity, taming the barbarism of our ancient past" (Kaku 17).

Therefore, poetry and literature written by humans will still stay relevant, and will continue to be relevant even in the 21<sup>st</sup> century and beyond. Many of the themes in the literature concern the human condition.

Poetry reading could enrich lives and foster emotional resilience. Human life should not be "solitary, poor, nasty, brutish and short" as mentioned in Hobbes' Leviathan (1651), but be an ardent embrace of goodness through wise, ethical choices in the plethora of human living conditions and life circumstances. To combat the apathy and slow death of human society, social contract and benevolence should be the source code for mankind and in the algorithms of the AI robots. In a civic society where humans are ethically accountable to each other, man should think beyond the "superman," that is, to seek not only one's supremacy but also promote the interests of fellow members. To counter man's great anxiety over AI's seemingly all-encompassing abilities, even in the domains of arts and literature, there should be a collective effort to re-examine Miller's (2002) "end of literature" theory and consider Nie (2021)'s proposition to increase the magnitude of the science in literature related to AI. In this respect, Malaysian writers have deftly demonstrated their concerns over a human world with the AIs, writing on AI themes with sensitivity and creativity in their existential and ethical responses to living with AI in their poetry and short stories.

### Works cited

段梦悦: "伦理冲突与伦理选择: 石黑一雄《克拉拉与太阳》的文学伦理学解读",《海外英语》 3(2022): 209-211。

[Duan Mengyue. "Ethical Conflicts and Ethical Choice: An Ethical Literary Criticism on Kazuo Ishiguro's *Klara and the Sun.*" *Overseas English* 3 (2022): 209-211.]

潘碧华、祝家丰: "方北方小说与马来西亚华人的国家认同", 《外国文学研究》6(2011): 126-132。

[Fan, Pik Wah and Thock ker Pong. "The Malaysian Chinese Homeland Consciousness and Fang Beifang's Novels." *Foreign Literature Studies* 6 (2011): 126-132.]

郭雯: 《克隆人科幻小说的文学伦理学批评研究》。南京: 南京大学出版社, 2019年。

[Guo Wen. An Ethical Literary Criticism on Clones in Sci-Fi Novels. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2019]

Ho Sok Fong. Lake Like A Mirror. London: Granta, 2019.

- —. The Evolution of Literary Views in the Early Years of the Chao Foon's Literary Journal (1955-1960). 2017. Nanyang Technology University, Doctoral dissertation.
- Holman, C. Hugh and William Harmon. *A Handbook to Literature*. 6<sup>th</sup> ed. New York and London: Macmillan, 1992.

胡星灿: "技法、现实、文学理想: 马华科幻文学的创作动机考察(1957-2015)",《香港文学》

- 10 (2020) 。
- <a href="http://www.hongkongliterary.com/dzdetail.jsp?id=14697&pid==34493421&dzid=50448068&n">http://www.hongkongliterary.com/dzdetail.jsp?id=14697&pid==34493421&dzid=50448068&n</a>
- [Hu Xingchan. "Techniques, Reality and Literary Idealism: Examining the Motives of Writing in Mahua Sci-fi Literature (1957-2015)." Hongkong Literature 10 (2020). 1 November 2022 <a href="http://www.hongkongliterary.com/dzdetail.jsp?id=14697&pid=34493421&dzid=50448068&n">http://www.hongkongliterary.com/dzdetail.jsp?id=14697&pid=34493421&dzid=50448068&n</a> av=1>.]
- Kaku, Michio. Physics of the Future: How Science will Shape Human Destiny and our Daily Lives by Year 2100. New York: Doubleday, 2011.
- 龚万辉: 《人工少女》。吉隆坡: 有人出版社,2022年。
- [King Banhui, Ririka. Kuala Lumpur: Got One Publisher, 2022]
- 李树枝: "天狼星——科幻吗?以《天狼星科幻诗选》中周伟祺、陈浩源以及温任平之诗为讨 论对象", 2015 马华文学研究和传播国际学术研讨会: 天狼星诗社与现代主义会议文集, 2015年。
- [Lee Soo Chee. "Sirius sci-fi? Examining Poems by Zhou Weiqi, Chen Haoyuan and Wen Renping in Sirius Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology" in the Proceeding of the 2015 International Conference on the Study and Dissemination of Malaysian Chinese Literature: With Special Focus on the Sirius Poetical Society and Modernism, 2015. (Conference Paper)]
- 刘育龙: "备份", 《新马文学高铁微型小说》, 刘瑞金、陈政欣主编。新加坡: 新加坡作家 协会与马来西亚华文作家协会,2017:158-159。
- [Lew Yok Long. "Copy." Singapore-Malaysia Literature High-speed Rails: Short Stories, edited by Liu Ruijin and Tan Cheng Sin. Singapore: Malaysian Writers Association of Chinese Medium-Singapore Association of Writers, 2017: 158-159.]
- 李玲:《论〈弗兰肯斯坦〉中科学人的身份困惑与伦理选择》,2015。华中师范大学,硕士论文。
- [Li Ling. Identity Confusion and Ethical Choice of Scientific Man in Frankenstein. 2015. Central China Normal University, Master dissertation.]
- 凌妹等: "伦理道德的较量——试论《三体》中的伦理•选择与人性述求", 《文教资料》25 (2018): 11-24.
- [Ling Mei, et al. "Power Struggle of Ethics: Ethical Appeals, Choice and Human Nature in The Three Body." Wenjiao Ziliao 25 (2018):11-24.]
- 刘靓: "小说《仿生人会梦见电子羊吗 》的文学伦理学解读", 《英语广场: 学术研究》1 (2021) : 3-7.
- [Liu Jing. "An Ethical Literary Criticism on Do Androids Dream of Electric Sheep?" The English Platform: Academic Research 1 (2021): 3-7.
- 吕育陶: 《在我万能的想象国度》。吉隆坡: 千秋事业社, 1999年。
- [Looi Yook Tho. In my Wonderful Imaginary Kingdom. Kuala Lumpur: Mentor Publishing Sdn. Bhd., 1999.1

- 吕超: "西方科幻小说中的机器人伦理", 《外国文学研究》1(2015): 34-40。
- [Lv Chao. "Robotic Ethics in the Western Sci-fi Novels." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2015): 34-40.]
- 聂珍钊: "文学跨学科发展 ——论科技与人文学术研究的革命",《外国文学研究》2 (2021): 31-42。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "The Interdisciplinary Development of Literature: The Revolution of Science and Technology and Academic Research in Humanities." *Foreign Literature Studies* 2 (2021): 31-42.]
- Nietzsche, Freidrich. "Thus Spoke Zarathustra in Hollingdale." *Nietzsche: The man and his philosophy*, edited by R. J. London: Penguin Books Ltd., 2001.
- Miller, J. Hillis. On literature. Oxfordshire, U.K.: Routledge, 2002.
- Pepperell, Robert. *The Posthuman Condition: Consciousness Beyond the Brain.* Bristol, U.K.: Intellect Books, 2003.
- Poisot-Cervantes, Hiram. Nietzsche's Idea of the Overman and the Current State of Collective Consciousness. 2018. Queen's University Canada, Master dissertation.
- Scholl, Zack. "For the Bristlecone Snag. Beam." *The Archive*, edited by Elizabeth, & Fishman, Dan. Duke University: Undergraduate Publications Board, 2011: 30-31. 1 November 2022, https://issuu.com/dukeupb/docs/thearchive\_fall2011.
- Shklovsky, "Viktor." *Viktor Shklovsky: A Reader*, translated by Berlina, Alexandra. New York: Bloomsbury Academic, 2017.
- Suvin, Darko. "Estrangement and Cognition." *Strange Horizons*. 24 November 2014 <a href="http://strangehorizons.com/non-fiction/articles/estrangement-and-cognition">http://strangehorizons.com/non-fiction/articles/estrangement-and-cognition</a>
- 王松林: "对后人类时代'科学人'主体性的深度思考: 评郭雯的《克隆人科幻小说的文学伦理学批评研究》",《英美文学研究论丛》34 (2021): 349-354。
- [Wang Songlin. "A Criticism on Guo Wen's An Ethical Literary Criticism on Clones in Sci-Fi Novels." Yingmei Wenxue Yanjiu Luntan 34 (2021): 349-354.]
- 温任平主编: 《天狼科幻诗选》。霹雳州安顺: 有加出版社, 2015年。
- [Woon Swee Tin ed. Sirius Sci-Fi Poetry Anthology. Teluk Intan, Perak: U Plus P, 2015.]
- 姚拓: "七个世纪以后", 《蕉风》47(1957): 8-11。
- [Yao Tuo. "After seven centuries." Chao Foon 47 (1957): 8-11.]
- 张光达: "马华科幻诗小史 (1988-2015): 取材, 文体, 诠释", 《南洋商报 南洋文艺》10(2015), <a href="http://freesor.blogspot.com/2015/10/1988-2015.html">http://freesor.blogspot.com/2015/10/1988-2015.html</a>。
- [Zhang Guangda. "A Brief History of Sci-fi Poems in Mahua Literature (1988-2015): Source Materials, Texts Interpretations." *Nanyang Wenyi* in *Nanyang Shangbao*. 10 (2015). 1 November 2022, <a href="http://freesor.blogspot.com/2015/10/1988-2015.html">http://freesor.blogspot.com/2015/10/1988-2015.html</a>.]
- Zhu Liyuan. "Hillis Miller on the End of Literature." Modern Language Quarterly 79 (2018): 289-307.

## Heavy or Light: Makeup as an Ethical Choice in *The Razor's Edge*

### Lou Yu

Abstract: Somerset Maugham, a late Victorian British writer, examines in the early twentieth century how female identity is shaped by the daily routines of face painting. In his depiction of women's makeup, Maugham surveys the relationship between identity construction in literary characters and their body representations. Taking makeup as an analytic subject, this paper studies the three changes in the heroine Sophie's makeup styles and the three constructions of her ethical identity from the perspective of ethical literary criticism and the social constructionist views of the body. Through makeup narratives embodying body representations, Maugham probes deep into the tensions between the old and new moral codes, and explores the possible harmony between body and spirit, which provides inspiration for the construction of female identity in the twentieth century.

**Keywords:** *The Razor's Edge*; makeup; body; ethical identity

**Author: Lou Yu** is Ph.D. Candidate at the School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her main research interests include British and American literature and ethical literary criticism (Email: 12105013@zju.edu. cn).

标题:浓与淡:《刀锋》中的妆容选择与女性身份建构

内容摘要:作为后维多利亚时代的英国作家,早在20世纪初期,萨默塞特·毛姆便思考着日常妆容背后隐含的女性身份建构问题。通过对不同女性的妆容描写,毛姆体现了文学人物的身份建构与身体表征的紧密关联。本文以小说《刀锋》中三位女性角色的妆容为研究对象,以文学伦理学批评和身体社会学为批评视角,重点阐释了苏菲在妆容方面的三次改变,体现了她对其伦理身份的三次重构。通过体现身体表征的妆容叙事,毛姆展现了旧道德与新道德的冲突,身体与精神的统一,为20世纪的女性身份建构提供了借鉴和启迪。

关键词:《刀锋》; 妆容; 身体; 伦理身份

作者简介: 楼昱,浙江大学外国语学院博士研究生,主要研究方向为英美文学和文学伦理学批评。本文系国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号: 19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

### Introduction

While the spotlight of *The Razor's Edge* (1944) is usually shed on Larry Darrell and his spiritual journey to a life worth living after the World War I, the female characters and their struggle in the post-war society equally deserve our attention. Among the three main female characters, Sophie is the least noticeable. As an upper-class lady, Isabel grabs our attention with her stunning beauty and luxurious lifestyle, while Suzanne, a French model, lures us to spy into her love affairs with one artist after another. There seems nothing special or important about Sophie. Sophie, depicted in the very first chapters of the novel, fades away quietly as the novel involves more interesting characters and juicy stories. In the latter chapters, when the reader as well as her friends meet her again, her innocence is completely gone and she is labeled as a slut by Isabel and her group because of her sluttishness in appearance, vulgarity in language, inappropriateness in behavior, and nonconformity in mind. Still Maugham the writer, through the mouth of Mr. Maugham the narrator, fervently defends Sophie against the harsh criticism landing on her. He makes Sophie an admirable object for Larry who barely admires anything or anyone worldly. In Larry's words, "She had a lovely soul, fervid, aspiring and generous. Her ideals were greathearted. There was even at the end a tragic nobility in the way she sought destruction" (Maugham, The Razor's Edge 239). Larry's high opinion of Sophie forms a sharp contrast with the vulgar image of Sophie viewed from Isabel and her upper-class circle. Why is there such a contrast? What is so detestable and in the meantime admirable about Sophie? What is Maugham's ethical message to his reader through Sophie's change?

Sophie's ethical identity is visually manifested in her face. In contrast to Isabel and Suzanne who deliberately paint their faces in a light style, Sophie is heavily painted. Inspired by Bryan Turner's social constructionist views of the body, this paper sees body not as the natural base of society but the outcome of social forces and relations. Turner's notion of a "somatic society" means a society in which major social and personal problems are both problematized in the body and expressed through it. As an important showcase of body, face is born natural. Yet a woman's decoration of her face suggests the effects of nurture and culture. Face painting is thus representative of the changing aesthetic and moral attitudes. A woman's face is expressive of her soul, and her soul is indicative of a value she identifies with. A face painted in diverse colors and styles offers wider space for

<sup>1</sup> See Bryan Turner, *The Body and Society: Explorations in Social Theory*, Newbury Park: Sage, 2008.

translating personal stories and investigating moral beliefs. Moreover, Maugham, aware of the significance of a character's appearance, claims in his literary memoir The Summing Up that "the physical traits of a man influence his character and contrariwise his character is expressed, at least in the rough, in his appearance" (215). The portrayal of his characters' external traits is hence indicative of their internal qualities. Therefore, the questions are: What is the writer's intention of assigning different styles of makeup to different female characters? What does the surface of heavy or light makeup tell us about the soul of these characters?

This paper reads the practice of face painting as an ethical choice employed to expose the conflicts between different moral codes in Western societies in the early twentieth century. As a means to an end, the choice of makeup is ethically loaded. As opposed to an aesthetic judgment, an ethical insight into a painted face is focused on the dynamics between makeup and morality which underpins the daily routines of face painting. Though this study dwells on the surface of a painted face, it goes deeper into the questions the theory of ethical literary criticism, proposed by Nie Zhenzhao, is invested in: What is the ethical environment during the decade following the end of World War I? What ethical identities do the three women construct or deconstruct through the ethical choice of makeup application? How are conflicting moral codes presented, analyzed, and tackled in response to the social problems of the time? These questions will guide us to interpret and understand Maugham's ethical stance in the post-war world.

### Ethical Environment: A Post-war World Caught Between Old and New Moral Codes

Nie Zhenzhao states the significance of ethical environment in literary criticism as follows: "A premise for literary interpretation is to understand literature based on the ethical environment and the ethical context of its particular historical period" ("Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory" 191). We can better understand the ethical choices made in the context by looking at the ethical environment of the early twentieth century. In analyzing the sexual revolution in modern English literature, Glicksberg claims that "no playwright better illustrates the revolution effected in moral values in the twentieth century than Somerset Maugham" (61). By placing the main setting of *The Razor's Edge* in Chicago and Paris after World War I, Maugham undoubtedly keeps in mind the trials and tribulations of the era filled with the war effort, post-war disillusion, and the great depression followed by a second world war. The vast economic, political, and social changes are accompanied by wide-reaching modifications in moral attitudes and beliefs. As a result, the world is caught between the old and new moral codes.

Makeup provides a window into the moral landscape of the era. Drew-Bear, an expert on performing arts, identifies the relationship between physical characteristics and moral expressions by arguing that "what they wore on their faces conveyed moral implications" (23). The moral message of a painted face, however, has long been negative. Biblical denunciations of lavish appearance combined with "attacks on make up and elaborate dressing" in classical tradition have produced "a cosmetic theology" that links painted women with demons and barbarians (Tuke 107). The Victorian morality, with its emphasis on womanly purity, unsurprisingly embraces the "cosmetic theology". As a late Victorian writer, Maugham is not unfamiliar with this "cosmetic theology" and describes the panic about the use of cosmetics among Englishwomen. He introduces this phenomenon in his novel *The Merry-Go-Round*:

The average Englishwoman who paints her face, characteristically feeling it a first step in the descent to Avernus, paints it badly. She can never avoid the idea that cosmetics are a little wicked or a little vulgar, and a tiny devil, cloven-footed and betailed, lurks always at the bottom of her rouge-pot. (95)

Influenced by this moral code, a natural mode is morally approved and ugliness is considered as a "moral virtue" (Angeloglou 95). The absence of makeup, or the avoidance of a overly painted face, is viewed as a moral virtue because it serves the interests of capitalist economy. As Max Weber sees it, the Protestant ethic and the spirit of capitalism require individuals to practice "asceticism". In the Victorian era, self-discipline and self-restraint were deemed key factors for securing industrial wealth, traditional success, and cultural confidence. Light makeup, not too much to lose self-discipline and not too bare to decrease sex appeal, serves as a symbol of such discipline and restraint, and signifies the transformation of the internal body "into the orbit of everyday asceticism" (Turner 148). Isabel and Suzanne, apply makeup strategically with an aim to marry their way into the upper class and construct the ethical identity of a high-class lady. They are what Susie Orbach and Kim Chernin call girls "subject to a socialization process geared to achieving success in marriage markets" (qtd. in Shilling 58). A girl's body becomes an important site of such socialization.

In the meantime, a new world and a new morality are born as a result of World War I. Historian van Loon observed the emergence of a new spirit in which women were "to breathe and to be masters of their own minds and bodies" for the first time in history. Women who used to be confined in the domestic sphere contributed to the war effort and earned themselves income as well as a taste of freedom.

Consequently, the old moral code stressing that "women were the guardians of morality" (Allen 88) became increasingly out-dated, and the images of Victorian and Puritan were despised as "old ladies with bustles and inhibitions" (Allen 112). To be modern, to smash conventions, and to be devastatingly frank became the new trend for some young women. It was under this trend that highly visible cosmetics, partly thanks to the standardized production, reentered the mainstream. While the old morality holds that the obsession with cosmetics signifies "the absence of work and the ability to consume conspicuously" (Turner 148), the new morality stands against asceticism and supports a woman's newfound freedom. A woman's face covered with heavy makeup seems to convey a different voice in the early twentieth century: They want to live a different life from their mothers. It is in this belief that some women stop painting rigidly to please men and start painting freely to please themselves. Sophie and her free use of cosmetics exhibit a woman's adventure in pursuit of bodily autonomy and spiritual independence in the Roaring Twenties.

Such is the ethical environment of the post-war Western society where the old and new moral codes run neck to neck, and conventionality and nonconformity go side by side. Through makeup narratives, Maugham invites us to revisit the Roaring Twenties, re-evaluate the contrasting moralities in his time, and study their influences on women's face and soul, and body and identity in *The Razor's Edge*.

### Light Makeup for A Chic Style: An Ethical Choice for Social Identification

The Victorian moral code denounces makeup as vulgar and molds many women into a certain pattern. Isabel and Suzanne are among those who fit their physical appearance and social behavior into the pattern approved by the accepted social mores. On the surface, they paint and present their faces light in tone, soft in color, and chic in look. With this chic style deliberately cultivated by techniques such as makeup, they aim to construct the ethical identity of a high-class lady. For them, a conventional upper-class life is worth all their bodily and mental efforts. Their daily subscription to makeup suggests their belief in the congruity between appearance and class. Underneath their lightly painted faces, Maugham shows how a body indiscriminately subject to social mores can lead to an unfulfilled life.

Isabel, an American girl born rich, applies makeup to transform her ethical identity from a chic-less girl to "the smartest kept woman in Paris" whose "wonderful chic" she admires, because chic suggests expense, taste, and circle (The Razor's Edge 168). Since chic is best presented in an effortless, not hard won, manner, Isabel carefully cultivates "a look of perfect spontaneity" from the way she moves her hand to the color she puts on her face (The Razor's Edge 139). Makeup hence becomes an instrument to cultivate chic and join a circle. Back in America, Isabel used to be fresh and natural with "her radiant health, her playful gaiety, her enjoyment of life, the happiness you felt in her" (*The Razor's Edge* 22). After four months of seeking and nurturing a chic style in Paris, Isabel successfully turns herself into "a work of conscious art that had been years in the making" (*The Razor's Edge* 139). Mr. Maugham, a family friend of hers, is struck by the change in her appearance:

There was not a line on her forehead or under her hazel eyes, and though her skin had lost the fresh bloom of extreme youth, its texture was as fine as ever; it obviously owed something now to lotions, creams and massage, but they had given it a soft, transparent delicacy that was singularly attractive. Her thin cheeks were very faintly rouged and her mouth was painted with discretion. (*The Razor's Edge* 138)

Isabel's chic style takes a lot of work and is largely owed to the skincare products and makeup skills. Her creation of a soft glam makeup look, the "no makeup" makeup look, grasps the core of a chic style—a "careless confidence" as well as the essence of the Victorian morality (*The Razor's Edge* 138).

This ethical identity, on the other hand, influences the way she manages and presents her face. With the upper-class identity, Isabel takes care to look, speak, and act in accordance with her respectable title. In a scene where she gets emotional thinking of how she gives up Larry, Isabel makes sure to keep tears off her face, avoiding damage to her perfect aristocratic appearance. As Mr. Maugham ironically observes:

She began to cry and, thinking it would do her good, I let her be. [...] Presently Isabel took a handkerchief from her bag and a mirror and, looking at herself, carefully wiped the corner of her eyes.

[...] She powdered her face and painted her lips. (The Razor's Edge 210)

Powdering her face and painting lips immediately after crying seem to suggest the hypocrisy of her tears. The very act of checking her makeup can be read as a form of surveillance. As Bartky argues: "The woman who checks her make-up half a dozen times a day [...] has become, just as surely as the inmate of the Panopticon, a self-policing subject, a self committed to a relentless self-surveillance" (80). Isabel, the wife of a wealthy businessman, conducts a self-surveillance of her makeup to ensure that how she looks represents who she is. Makeup hence becomes "a

strategy of self-manifestation" (Whigham 33). Whigham notices that in Elizabethan courtesy literature, the use of cosmetics by female and male courtiers reflects "the ostentatious practice of symbolic behavior taken to typify aristocratic being" and "to express their privileged positions and their ostentatious courtly values" (33). Isabel's makeup shares a similar purpose, for it aims to manifest her ethical identity as a high-class lady. To achieve an upper-class lifestyle, Isabel has to endure its social control over her body.

However, Isabel's ethical choices of creating a light makeup look, cultivating a Parisian chic style, and constructing a upper-class identity, come at a price. The Victorian morality doesn't encourage expression of the true self. In choosing her life partner, she cannot afford to follow her heart. Between Larry the poor and Gray the rich, while her heart goes for Larry, she sacrifices her real cravings to marry Gray. Larry, who refuses to settle down with any respectable professions and profitable businesses, cannot promise her a promising life. In contrast, Gray and his family business are her best chance to stay in the upper class and enjoy a comfortable life. Isabel admits that marrying Gray is a sensible choice "from every practical standpoint, from the standpoint of worldly wisdom, from the standpoint of common decency, from the standpoint of what's right and wrong" (The Razor's Edge 94-95). Yet her instinctual cravings remain unfulfilled. Mr. Maugham once witnesses Isabel's explicit expression of her sensual desire for Larry, which is "animal rather human" (The Razor's Edge 189). He observes that: "her beautiful features [...] assume an expression of such unbridled sensuality. [...] The beauty was stripped from her face; the look upon it made her hideous and frightening" (The Razor's Edge 189). At that point her decent makeup fails to conceal her strong yearnings. In Nie Zhenzhao's theory, Isabel is "a new Sphinx possessing both the features of human beings and those of animals" ("Towards an Ethical Literary Criticism" 91). Nevertheless, Isabel is sober enough not to act upon her inner desires, which may ruin her ethical relationship with Gray and deprive her of a respectable ethical identity as well as a luxurious lifestyle. To further satisfy her desire for possessiveness, Isabel sets a trap, lures Sophie into booze, and ruins her marital union with Larry. After all, Sophie, a morally fallen woman, constitutes a threatening force to their circle. It is thus revealed that beneath Isabel's beautiful features and decent makeup hides an unfulfilled desire and a selfish heart. In her painted face, Maugham sees a socially privileged woman's hypocrisy, spiritual emptiness, and lack of empathy.

Suzanne is different from Isabel in that she is born underprivileged, yet she shares the same aspiration to crawl into the upper class. Her body hence becomes an admission ticket to the selected circle. Without Isabel's natural beauty and entitled blood, Suzanne applies makeup to turn herself from nobody to somebody. Makeup becomes an instrument to conceal ugliness and create beauty for her. Her beauty is carefully fabricated by her efforts of applying makeup to underplay her demerits and highlight her strength. As Mr. Maugham notices:

She had a small square face, with very prominent cheekbones vividly rouged, and a large mouth with heavily painted lips. None of this sounds attractive, but it was; it is true that she had a good skin, strong white teeth and big, vividly blue eyes. They were her best features and she made the most of them by painting her eyelashes and her eyelids. She had a shrewd, roving, friendly look and she combined great good nature with a proper degree of toughness. (*The Razor's Edge* 171-172)

For Suzanne, beauty itself is not an end but a means to an end—a secured life. Makeup serves as a weapon for her to attain beauty, attract suitors, and achieve security. Between the lover for artists and the wife of a rich old widower, though she enjoys her freedom to play around, she chooses to settle down with the widower. The presence of vivid lines, heavy lip, and eyeliner agrees with her former ethical identity of a model and lover for artists. In consideration of her growing age and the future of her daughter born out of wedlock, Suzanne quits her modeling career, climbs up the social ladder by marrying Monsieur Achille, and constructs a new ethical identity of "a distinguished artist" and "a woman of property" (The Razor's Edge 311). For constructing this identity, her heavy makeup is strategically replaced by a light look, one that is morally approved and favored by the upper ranks. The first time Suzanne meets her potential prey Monsieur Achille, "she had dressed very quietly, and she felt as she looked at the women around her that she could pass very well for a respectable married woman" (The Razor's Edge 176). The quietness of her manners and the lightness of her makeup suggest her identification with the feminine ideal of Victorian morals.

With Suzanne's construction of a respectable ethical identity comes a loss of her much-enjoyed liberty and an everlasting anxiety of losing her husband to a girl of twenty for he is "at a dangerous age" and she "shall never see forty again" (*The Razor's Edge* 309). Suzanne counts on men to provide for her and thus becomes "a body designed to please or to excite" (Bartky 80). She weaponizes her body through makeup to charm men into taking care of her worldly needs. Makeup hence becomes "a form of obedience to patriarchy" (Bartky 80). To be accepted by a

cultured community, she voluntarily accepts its control over her body. In Suzanne's painted face, Maugham sees an underprivileged woman's ambition to climb the social ladder as well as her surrender to the patriarchal order.

Isabel and Suzanne's ethical choice of light makeup is closely entangled with the ethical identity of an upper-class lady they crave to construct. The Victorian value of feminine purity and the Victorian ideal of "the angel in the house" have molded their faces into a certain pattern that allows them to gain the upper hand in the marriage market. Whether it be Suzanne's claim that "marriage still remains the most satisfactory profession a woman can adopt" (The Razor's Edge 309) or Isabel's uncle Elliot's assertion that "a marriage arranged with proper regard to position, fortune and community of circumstances has every advantage over a love match" (The Razor's Edge 34), they hold on to the old-fashioned view that for women success in life depends on marriage and marriage depends on money. Maugham finds such a view stifling. With the cultivation of socially approved beauty and the indiscriminate acceptance of social mores, what is at stake is a woman's agency over her body and soul. Maugham shares this view with his modernist peers, such as Virginia Woolf who claims that the conventional idea of "living for other, not for ourselves" is intended for "timid natures who dare not allow their souls free play" (qtd. in Himmelfarb 93). If free play of one's body is restricted, free play of one's soul suffers correspondingly. Though Isabel and Suzanne achieve worldly success, spiritually there remains a spot unfilled.

### Heavy Makeup for A Free Soul: An Ethical Choice for Self-fulfillment

The new morality, defined by liberalism and individualism, questions the Victorian morality and changes the way cosmetics are perceived and used. Emphasizing physical features is no longer seen as being as selfish or evil as it once was. The stress on the invisibility of makeup gives way to highly visible cosmetics, such as red lipstick and dark eyeliner. Sophie wears heavy makeup to match her free soul, an ethical identity she performs devotedly. Her defense of heavy makeup is indeed her defense of bodily autonomy and spiritual independence and her defiance of the Victorian morality. Underneath her heavily painted face Maugham sees her motifs filled with dignity and integrity.

Sophie's first ethical identity, a modest, freckled, serious-faced, and idealistic child who loves books, is accompanied by a look of innocence. When Isabel and her mother were "out being social" (The Razor's Edge 198), Sophie and Larry used to "read poetry together under the elm tree that there was in that skinny brat the seed of spiritual beauty" (The Razor's Edge 296). An extensive reading about the conditions

of the working classes and seeing the situation in Chicago inspired her to become a social worker. She was found "writing savagely in free verse about the misery of the poor and the exploitation of the working classes" (*The Razor's Edge* 199). Larry was deeply moved by "her desire for sacrifice" and impressed by "a lovely purity and a strange loftiness of soul" (*The Razor's Edge* 199). Later Sophie married Bob, a lawyer who didn't make much money, and their marriage became "quite a joke in Chicago" (*The Razor's Edge* 196) because they are soul mates rather than yoke mates. For her, love outweighs economic benefits in making a match. Due to their committed relationship, when a motor accident took away her beloved husband and their baby, Sophie "didn't care what became of her and flung herself into the horrible degradation of drink and promiscuous copulation to get even with life that had treated her so cruelly" (*The Razor's Edge* 198). After the accident, Sophie's makeup has changed from light to heavy, and her ethical identity undergoes the first reconstruction from an innocent child to a wanton woman.

The upper-class circle, shaped by Victorian values, associates Sophie's heavy makeup with moral degeneration. Her heavy makeup forms so sharp a contrast with her previous image of innocence that "Isabel was staring at her blankly, Gray had a sullen frown on his face and Larry gazed as though he couldn't believe his eyes" (The Razor's Edge 192). They uncomfortably notice that "She was outrageously made up, her cheeks rouged to the eyes, and her eyelids, upper and lower, heavily blued; her eyebrows and eyelashes were thick with mascara and her mouth scarlet with lipstick. Her hands, with their painted nails, were dirty" (The Razor's Edge 193). This image has challenged the conventional morality of feminine purity and incurred the wrath of the cultured community. Isabel refers to Sophie as "that drunken slut" (The Razor's Edge 205), considers her evil in nature, and urges others to waste no pity on her just because she loses her husband and child. The upper-class circle is less sympathetic to her suffering and more concerned with her misconduct. Sophie's heavy makeup becomes an easy target in the eyes of Victorians who consider the use of paint immoral, for the old morality intolerantly includes "painted woman," "public woman" and the woman who "loses her character" as sexually immoral women (Anderson 2).

Maugham, on the other hand, reads Sophie's heavy makeup as a physical indicator of her noble soul in pursuit of bodily autonomy and spiritual freedom. While the upper class regards Sophie's painted face as a manifestation of her tainted soul, Mr.Maugham views her aggressive look not as a sign of moral degeneration and finds her heavily painted face "not without lure" (*The Razor's Edge* 220). He empathizes with her tragic loss which is almost "the end of the world" to her and

understands her painted face as a coping mechanism, a self-expression, and most importantly a vigorous revolt (*The Razor's Edge* 198). Sophie wears heavy makeup to hide her deepest sorrow and to express her attitude that "Life's hell anyway, but if there is any fun to be got out of it, you're only a god-damn fool if you don't get it" (The Razor's Edge 224). Mr. Maugham defends Sophie's right to wear heavy makeup, weave her own pattern of life, and perform the ethical identity of a free soul. Heavy makeup functions as an instrument to heal a broken heart while light makeup only leads to constraint in her case.

To further justify Sophie's choice of heavy makeup, Maugham arranges a second change of her makeup from heavy to light and a reconstruction of her ethical identity from a wanton woman to a decent lady. Her once "outrageously painted" face is replaced by a "drab" look when Sophie enters into a relationship with Larry (The Razor's Edge 212). Larry's attempt to save Sophie out of a troubled life renders her a new ethical identity as his fiancee, and this role brings out a new look of light makeup:

She was letting her hair go back to its natural colour and it had the slatternly look that hair has when it has been dyed and left to grow. Except for a streak of red on her lips she had no make-up on. Her skin was rough and it had an unhealthy pallor. I remembered how vividly green her eyes had looked, but now they were pale and gray. (The Razor's Edge 213)

Is losing strong colors on her face a gain of purity and morality for her soul? Mr. Maugham's response to the new face shows the opposite, for the unnatural twist against Sophie's nature proves a failure. Gone are her vivid green eyes and heavy makeup, so is her spirit. It's true that with the new face she loses sluttishness, but it's also true that "something had died in her" (The Razor's Edge 214). Being Larry's fiancee puts her to "a strain greater than she could support" (The Razor's Edge 214), and she just can not see herself "being Mary Magdalen to his Jesus Christ" (The Razor's Edge 220). Larry's unconditional love as well as the Victorian morality is what Orbach calls "a subtle tracery of outside urgings which works on us, creating a new and often dissatisfied relationship with our bodies" (2). The transformation that has changed the way she looks, dresses, speaks, and behaves fails because it suggests a morality she cannot make peach with.

Unwilling to be bridled or tamed into a virtuous woman, Sophie makes a lastminute exit from the upcoming marriage, returns to her "troubled" life, retreats to her ethical identity of a free soul, and resorts to heavy makeup for a self-expression and revolt. For a third time, Sophie changes her makeup from light to heavy and reconstructs her ethical identity of a free soul. She is once again heavily madeup, wears bright colors, and puts on casual slacks. Only in this way can she "feel alive again" (*The Razor's Edge* 222). In a way heavy makeup satisfies her cravings for freedom while light makeup suppresses her bodily and spiritual needs. In Sophie's painted face, Maugham sees her moral courage to stay true to her nature and to take control of her body.

Sophie's ethical choice of heavy makeup and ethical identity of a free soul can be read as her revolt against the Victorian morality. As the Victorian morality sees it, Sophie's heavily painted face, her refusal to Larry's marriage proposal, and engagement in promiscuous copulation are but evidence of moral degradation. She is in deep trouble and she is able to get out of this trouble so long as she paints her face decently, represses her urges to drink, and remarries a decent guy like Larry. However, she refuses to reduce marriage into a mere trade-off of material needs. She cherishes Larry's love too dearly to take advantage of his good intentions. She refuses to hurt others to save herself; therefore, she voluntarily destroys herself and gets to reunite with her beloved ones. In this sense, Sophie takes a higher moral ground than anyone else. Instead of moral degeneration, Sophie represents what it means to be a moral being in an age of moral confusion. What the Victorian morality despises in her are exactly what Maugham admires about her—courage, generosity, and individualism. She has the moral courage to stay true to her nature, shows true generosity to others, and represents individualism and self-adjustment in a decade of "materialism, greed, conformity, and general silliness" (Reeves 88). Through the portrayal of the three women's makeup, Maugham laments how the Victorian morality molds people into a similar pattern, drives them into an endless pursuit of wealth and success, and reduces marriage into a mere transaction. The differences between Sophie, Isabel, and Suzanne lie in their attitude towards body and their identification with conventional morality. In contrast with Isabel and Suzanne, Sophie determines to have more control over her body and less identification with social mores. As a result, while her worldly life reaps sparingly, her spiritual life reaps more generously.

### Conclusion

When Susan Suleiman states that "the female body has occupied a central place in the Western cultural imagination" (1), she reminds us of the importance of female body as a source for cultural, literary, and social studies. While body remains an underrated subject in Victorian culture, it becomes a vital area of discussion and exploration for writers at the turn of the century. As a consumer society came to replace an industrial society, body becomes not only speakable but an important companion to spirit. In Maugham's literary narratives, his characters' identity construction is closely related to their body representations. A woman's body externalizes her identity and contrariwise her identity is expressed in her body. Makeup styles, therefore, become essential indicators of one's lifestyle, value orientation, and ethical stance. In *The Razor's Edge*, heavy and light makeup is employed to investigate the problem of body and spirit in the early twentieth century. The bodies of Isabel and Suzanne are controlled by the Victorian values. Their lightly painted faces aim to construct the ethical identity of high-class ladies and to achieve success in the marriage market. On the contrary, Sophie refuses to give up her control of her body, paints her face heavily, revolts against the Victorian moral code, and constructs an ethical identity of a free soul. While the bodies of Isabel and Suzanne defend the Victorian morality, Sophie employs her body to criticize and challenge the old morality and its restrictions imposed on women.

Like Larry, there is something about Sophie that speaks for Maugham's ethical stance. She is a telling example of what Maugham tries to tell his reader: Don't let go of control over your body. One who takes control over her body takes her life in her hands. Self-fulfillment can hardly be realized without bodily autonomy. As Beauvoir famously claims: "The body is not a thing, it is a situation: it is our grasp on the world and our sketch of our project" (73). Such autonomy needs to be earned, for temptations and restrictions on body operate in all forms, function in all ways, and exert influence to varying degrees. Therefore, when deciding to paint or not, heavy or light, you should find your own voice among all the voices around you. Nevertheless, Sophie could have exercised better control over her body to revolt and express. To engage in booze and promiscuous copulation, to release without due attention to self-control, and to go to extremes, are not revolt for the better but loss of control. Unsurprisingly yet lamentably, her way of controlling her body destroys her body, and a free soul becomes a lost soul in the end. A real and meaningful revolt, or liberation, requires deeper reflections of life so that ethical harmony "between man and man, man and society, or man and nature" can be expected (Nie Zhenzhao, "Towards an Ethical Literary Criticism" 88). Since body is the only place we have to live, we need to take better control and care of body if we want to live better lives.

### **Works Cited**

Allen, Frederick Lewis. Only Yesterday: An Informal History of the 1920s. New York: Harper & Bros.,

1931.

Anderson, Amanda. *Tainted Souls and Painted Faces: The Rhetoric of Fallenness in Victorian Culture*. Ithaca: Cornell UP, 2018.

Angeloglou, Maggie. A History of Make-up. New York: Macmillan, 1970.

Bartky, Sandra Lee. Femininity and Domination: Studies in the Phenomenology of Oppression. London: Routledge, 1990.

Beauvoir, Simone de. *The Second Sex*, translated and edited by H.M. Parshley. New York: Penguin, 1993

Drew-Bear, Annette. *Painted Faces on the Renaissance Stage: The Moral Significance of Face-Painting Conventions*. Lewisburg: Bucknell UP, 1994.

Glicksberg, Charles I. The Sexual Revolution in Modern English Literature. Dordrecht: Springer, 1973.

Himmelfarb, Gertrude. "In Defense of the Victorians." The Wilson Quarterly 12.3 (1988): 90-99.

Maugham, W. Somerset. The Merry-Go-Round. Portsmouth: Heinemann, 1969.

- —. The Razor's Edge. London: Penguin Books, 1963.
- —. The Summing Up. Manhattan: Arno Press, 1977.

Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 13.2 (2021): 189-207.

—. "Towards an Ethical Literary Criticism." Arcadia 50.1 (2015): 83-101.

Orbach, Susie. Bodies. London: Profile, 2009.

Reeves, Thomas C. Twentieth-century America: A Brief History. Oxford: Oxford UP, 2000.

Shilling, Chris. The Body and Social theory. Newbury Park: Sage, 2012.

Suleiman, Susan Rubin. *The Female Body in Western Culture: Contemporary Perspectives* vol.6, no.1-2. Cambridge: Harvard UP, 1986.

Turner, Bryan S. The Body and Society: Explorations in Social Theory. Newbury Park: Sage, 2008.

Tuke, Thomas. "A Treatise against Painting and Tincturing of Men and Women." Sexuality and Gender in the English Renaissance: An Annotated Edition of Contemporary Documents, edited by Lloyd Davis. vol. 10. Oxfordshire: Taylor & Francis, 1998.

Van Loon, Henrik Willem. "The World After the War." The Century Magazine Feb. 1916.

Whigham, Frank. Ambition and Privilege: The Social Tropes of Elizabethan Courtesy Theory. Oakland: U of California P, 1984.

# From Free Will to Ethical Responsibility: Interpretation of Philip Roth's View on Ethical Choice in *The Ghost Writer*

### Qiao Chuandai

Abstract: Employing the theory of Ethical Literary Criticism conceptualized by Nie Zhenzhao, this paper explores the ethical dilemma and selection process of three main characters, Nathan Zuckerman, Lonoff and Amy in Philip Roth's *The Ghost Writer* while wandering between rational will and free will, and the factors influencing their selection as well as. Their transformation from free will to rational will implies the growth of the author. Through this autobiographical novel, Roth presents his views on ethics of literature: human ethical identity and responsibility are not restrictions on freedom. but mean mutual understanding, compassion, and tolerance. Therefore, the transformation and growth of the writer's ethical consciousness help him make the right ethical choice. Nathan embodies the self-conflicting of Roth himself, acting as his agent.

**Keywords:** ethical literary criticism; *The Ghost Writer*; free will; ethical choice; ethical responsibility

**Author: Qiao Chuandai** is Associate Professor at the College of Foreign Studies, Hubei University of Automotive Technology (Shiyan 442002, China). His academic research focuses on Jewish-American literature and ethical literary criticism (Email: 20050013@huat.edu.cn). This paper is part of the result of research program the author hosts (Ministry of Education Humanities and Social Sciences Project).

标题: 从自由意志到道德责任: 解读菲利普·罗斯在《鬼作家》中的文学伦理观

内容摘要:本文运用聂珍钊教授的文学伦理学批评理论,探究菲利普罗斯《鬼作家》中三位主人公内森祖克曼、洛诺夫、艾米在理性意志和自由意志之间的伦理困境和选择的过程,以及影响他们伦理选择的因素。犹太作家内森和他的精神导师洛诺夫从自由意志到理性意志的转变代表了作家的成长。通过这部自传体小说罗斯也向读者展现自己的文学伦理观:人类的伦理认同和责任并不是对自由的限制。相反,还意味着相互理解、同情和包容。因此,作家伦理意识的转变与成长有助于他做出正确的伦理选择。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;《鬼作家》;自由意志;伦理选择;伦理责任作者简介:乔传代,湖北汽车工业学院外国语学院副教授,主要研究方向为美国犹太文学和文学伦理学批评。本文为教育部人文社科项目"从欲望叙事到伦理救赎——菲利普罗斯小说的文学伦理学批评"【项目批号:20YJC752012】阶段性成果。

### Introduction

The Ghost Writer is the first novel in Philip Roth's "Zuckerman series" and is deemed as the turning point of his writing style from realism to postmodernism. Combining a variety of artistic techniques, such as narration, flashbacks, memories, fantasies, inner soliloquies, subtext and so on, this novel covers almost all the traditional themes in American Jewish literature, like the assimilation and special identity confusion of Jews in American society, persecution and discrimination against Jews, the ethics of Jewish family, Jewish sacred family issues, the assimilation of marriage, personal struggle, and success, etc. In a way, this novel can be regarded as a typical immortal work in contemporary American Jewish literature. Since the publication of *The Ghost Writer*, many scholars have endeavored to interpret it from different perspectives. Due to Roth's Jewish identity and his works concerning the living state of survivors after the Holocaust, researchers mainly focus their attention on Roth's national concern, Jewish identity, interracial marriage, and Bildungsroman theme, and so on. In Roth's "Zuckerman series", his autobiographical writing is obvious, and The Ghost Writer is not the exception. Roth's autobiographical writing, with distinctive personality and unique aesthetic value, is "his writing strategy of self-defense when trapped in Jewish ethical conflict, reflecting his contemplation of American multicultural context as a Jewish American writer" (Su Xin 117). In this novel, Zuckerman's "impersonation" of Anne Frank and Amy Bellette marks the first appearance of the Holocaust in Zuckerman Bound. Ambivalence suffuses Zuckerman's personal artistic predicament—the Jewish writer is caught "between loyalty to the father and loyalty to art, between the capacity of the artist for self-sacrificing dedication and the capacity for self-promoting unscrupulousness, between the artist as beholden to his Jewish heritage and the artist as the independent being" (Elaine 615). By exploring how the protagonist conquers his self-motivated will with rational will when getting into ethical dilemma, Philip Roth solves the modern Sphinx riddle for readers, namely, how to become a real rational writer and a rational man.

After making the first biological choice, human beings are faced with the

second one, namely ethical selection—Eva and Adam's tasting forbidden fruit and cracking the mystery of Sphinx. It is the second ethical selection that made mankind truly get rid of the beast factor and become advanced animals with ethics different from wild animals:

Ethically human body itself contains human factor and animal factor. Animal factors are generally connected with self-motivated will (also known as natural will), embodying various desire of human beings, such as sexual desire, appetite, and so forth that demonstrate the basic physiological requirements and psychological dynamics of mankind. Human factors are the embodiment of human's rational will and ethical consciousness. (Nie Zhenzhao 7-8)

In many literary works, based on a certain ethical environment, human selfmotivated will and rational will often constitute two opposing forces, thus affecting human ethical behavior.

### Nathan's Ethical Dilemma: To be an Impartial Writer or A Jewish Defender

In The Ghost Writer, Philip Roth mainly revolves around how the protagonist Zuckerman "I" changed from adhering to a writer's ethics to making choices with ethical responsibility by conquering free will with rational will when trapped in the conflict between "my" moral ethics as a pure writer and social moral ethics as a Jewish writer. At the beginning, Nathan pursued the absolute freedom as a true moral writer, but later he realized the moral ethical responsibility for collective identity and revised his choice by considering his Jewish identity. Here Roth realizes that writers should also have an ethical responsibility when communicating his life experience and historical ideas to others. A young Jewish writer who came to the forefront in the literary world, Nathan felt that "I was still my family's Jewish offspring." (22)1 "I" (Nathan) have already been on the journey to Lonoff, a Jewish writer who lived in seclusion and stayed far away from the crowd but had still been well-renowned for years in literary world to "submit myself for candidacy as nothing less than E. I. Lonoff's spiritual son, to petition for his moral sponsorship and to win, if I could, the magical protection of his advocacy and his love" (17). And this is all because of the quarrel and divergence between Nathan and his family members.

The problem between my father and "I" stemmed from one of my most

See Philip Roth, The Ghost Writer, New York Vintage, 1995. All references are to this edition will be cited hereafter in parentheses.

ambitious novels, Higher Education. In this novel, Nathan involved the scandal of his family and exposed the greed and ugliness of the Jews, which aroused the anger and panic of the whole family, including his father, who came out to persuade and intervene to protect the honor of the family. In his father's opinion, Jewish people have been persecuted, discriminated against, and abused in the long course of history; therefore, as a Jewish writer, Nathan should rationally defend the interests of the Jewish people and describe the positive values of the Jews. For instance, his son should sing high praise for Jewish people, who were endowed with the noble spirit of self-sacrifice. And this is morally consistent with ethical norms. In the face of this national power silencing the voice of writers, Nathan must make a choice: to obey the rational will, take the ethical responsibility for Jews and defend the Jewish religious, or to obey his free choice, and take responsibility as a serious writer. Wandering around the ethical responsibility and his free will, Nathan firstly followed the latter, insisting that "artists should take a certain responsibility for their compatriots, for the society they live in, and for the cause of truth and justice" (184). His father tried to persuade him into changing his idea, but in vain. Then he turned to Judge Leopold Wapter, the most respected Jewish judge in the city for help. "People don't read art—they read about people" (196). Judge Wapter wrote to Nathan, asking him ten questions and recommended him to see Anne Frank's Diary in Broadway. As a second-generation immigrant, Nathan's feeling for the "sacred family" of Jews was not strong as that of his father. As a wild and intractable young man, Nathan longed to enter the mainstream of literature, become a serious writer, and portray the real life. So, he didn't reply to the judge, and didn't make any explanation to his father, either. "I am on my own!" (231) Therefore, Nathan removed the deified image of his own nationality under the view of religious culture and restored the true image of it. In his father's eyes, Nathan's behavior means his inner rebellion against the religious tradition and his son was no longer a pure Jew. "[...] after two decades of a more or less unbroken amiable conversation, we had not been speaking for nearly five weeks now, and I was off and away seeking patriarchal validation elsewhere" (18).

In Sartre's "Free choice", a man is free to choose to do anything, but at the same time he must be responsible for any consequences of his choice, not to blame God or fate. Nie Zhenzhao further holds that "everyone lives in an ethical choice, which must be made all the ethical choice is to make a choice according to certain social requirements and moral norms, which needs to conform to the specific ethical environment and context" (90-91). Therefore, ethical choice is not free choice; it is a kind of responsibility choice—everyone should be responsible for their own

choice. Being responsible for one's own choices, one must make choices about one's own choices. In the second chapter of the novel, on the night, boarding in Lonoff's study, to ease the strained relation between my father and "I", "I was about to write to my father to explain myself. But at the thought of Lonoff's praising my "my voice started back of my knees and reached above my head" (231), I tore the letter again in anger. "Hadn't Joyce, hadn't Flaubert, hadn't Thomas Wolfe, the romantic genius of my high school reading list, all been condemned for disloyalty or treachery or immorality by those who saw themselves as slandered in their works? Literary history was in part the history of novelists infuriating fellow countrymen, family, and friends" (Roth, The Ghost Writer 234). What I insist on now is my responsibility. "Writers weren't writers, if they didn't have the strength to face the insolubility of that conflict and go on" (234). However, boarding in his spiritual mentor, Lonoff's house, Nathan was also infected by the protagonist of his own novel. At heart, he rekindled a feeling of kinship for his own basically Americanized clan. To insist on his free choice to be a serious and pure writer, or to become a Jewish defender against his free will? Nathan was trapped into an ethical dilemma. On the one hand, from the works of a group of literary predecessors, such as Lonoff, Nathan realized that his circumcision had been engraved in the depths of his soul, and that Jewish identity had long been deeply rooted and would not and could not be discarded. But on the other hand, he was not able to ignore the artistic responsibility of a social writer simply to cater to his family and his own nation. Therefore, as a Jew's son, subconsciously Nathan couldn't neglect the tragedy that happened to his compatriots. He suffered a great deal for the desired to be both a qualified son and a serious writer to reflect the real life. Nathan finally solved the problem by making a compromise between his Jewish family and him.

While sharing breakfast with Lonoff the next day, Nathan constantly imagined himself returning to New Jersey to announce to his family:

"I met a marvelous young woman while I was up in New England. I love her and she loves me. We are going to be married."

Here, getting married to Anne, whose image is in accordance with the national image in his father's eyes, showed Nathan's strong desire to keep a harmony with

<sup>&</sup>quot;Married? But so fast? Nathan, is she Jewish?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Yes, she is."

<sup>&</sup>quot;But who is she?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Anne Frank." (336)

Jewish tradition. By imagining Amy's identity as Anne, who survived the Holocaust, Nathan hoped that by marrying with the suffering Jewish writer, he could also take the responsibility for his fellow citizens and be accepted by the Jewish community. Accordingly, he could look back the source of his literary career and redefine the relationship between the past and now, trying to understand how art comes from life, and reviews both his views on his father and his moral struggle.

Apparently, Nathan's insistence on his free choice was considered anti-Semitic and self-hating by his family. In fact, as an educated youth with modern higher education, Nathan accepted the educational view with modern rationality as the core, which inevitably broke the traditional family education with Judaism as the core and is greatly different from the world outlook and values with religion as the core advocated by his elder generation. This is the primary cause of his irreconcilable contradiction with his father. After experiencing a multiple personality struggle, Nathan realized the eternal significance of the contradiction between the artistic pursuit of free choice and the responsibility of family community. In this novel, just like Nathan, Roth himself has also experienced the conflict between writer's identity and Jewish nationality, as well as the conflict between fact and fiction. Both in writing and viewing Jewish culture, Roth has taken an objective attitude of taking the essence and abandoning the dross. Roth himself admitted that "my life is to falsify autobiographies from the real plot of my life, to fabricate history, and to make up a real and unreal substance" (Blake 381). In all literary works, characters can be regarded as a sphinx factor containing both goodness and evil. "The value of literature is to reveal the process of ethical selection conducted by human beings through disciplining the interplays of human factor and animal factor" (Nie Zhenzhao 15). Evidently, Roth helps readers crack the modern Sphinx riddle by demonstrate the process of the protagonist's ethical choice.

### Lonoff's Ethical Dilemma and Ethical Choice: From Free Will to Ethical Responsibility

To hold on to his artistic responsibility and embrace the world of art, Nathan did not hesitate to abandon his Jewish family and Jewish tradition, thus leaving him in isolation. So, he had to find another home to seek the support from his elder generation. At the same time, as a writer, he was also faced with other constraints and puzzles conflicts among various literary influences. With these confusions and puzzles, he visited Lonoff, his spiritual mentor, in the hope of finding answers with his help and guidance. However, both in literary creation and in family life, Lonoff, who lived far away from the crowd for a long time, was also caught in a

difficult dilemma. Through Lonoff, "my" spiritual mentor, Roth demonstrates the confrontation and restriction between human free choice and ethical responsibility.

Long-term living with his wife in nature far away from the crowd and breathing enough fresh air, Lonoff still felt himself gradually exhausted in writing creativity due to lack of flavor of life, coupled with the constraints of various external forces. For him, writing is equal to playing on words "I turn sentences around. That's my life" (36). On the relationship between art and life, Lonoff showed a negative reclusive creative mode, because his creation is almost entirely isolated from life. The only chance of contacting with the outside world is to teach writing at Athena College twice a week. "Going to the college is the high point of my week" (42). In addition to playing on words, Lonoff felt that his works in thirty years were all the products of his imagination and were composed completely divorced from life. His artistic belief is to refuse life. This is his free choice, and he took the responsibility. For decades, living in this pattern of complete detachment and repetition, he was at a loss. "And if I knock off from this routine for as long as a day, I'm frantic with boredom and a sense of waste" (36). Lonoff's creation model confirms the complete disconnection between literature art and real life; and art does not come from reality but replaces reality. However, as for the relationship between literary creation and life, he seems very confused. On the one hand, as for Zuckerman's isolation from his family and Jews, Lonoff thinks it's natural and acceptable for he believes that any real writers will feel isolated and cold for they generally stand higher than ordinary people do, and the pleasure of ordinary people is right the price of success. However, on the other hand, he advised Zuckerman not just immerse himself in art "If your life consists of reading and writing and looking at the snow, you'll wind up like me. Fantasy for thirty years" (64). Initially Zuckerman agreed that literary creation and real life should be strictly separated from each other. However, when Nathan told Lonoff his experience about writing, Lonoff said in a tone of disgust, "I wish I knew that much about anything. I've written fantasy for thirty years. Nothing happens to me" (32). This made Nathan rather puzzled, "Why, genius had happened to him, art had happened to him?" (33) Later, Nathan finally realized that real life and artistic creation should be complementary to each other, and the real literary works are the products of their blending.

Therefore, as for the question "whether the reality follows art or the art demonstrates reality" (67), Lonoff was always in an ethical dilemma. To uphold his artistic beliefs, for decades he had been practiced producing out of the reality. "It means I know who I am. I know the kind of man I am and the kind of writer. I have my own kind of bravery" (71). However, the creation out of reality had already made his works lose the charm of art, and he had to spend his time in biting phrases and chewing characters every day and felt gradually exhausted in writing creativity. Just as Lonoff said when commenting on Nathan's work, "that an unruly personal life will probably better serve a writer like Nathan than walking in the woods and startling the deer. His work has turbulence that should be nourished, and not in the woods. All I was trying to say is that he oughtn't to stifle what is clearly his gift" (69). At the same time, it also expressed Lonoff's dissatisfaction with his own current imagination. However, this is his choice, and he had to take responsible for it.

In literature, "the Sphinx factor has taken on the forms of natural will, free will and rational will. Natural will, to some degree, designates the primitives desire of human beings, and free will is the representation of human desire, while rational will is representation of ration. The three wills are the different realizations of Sphinx factor" (Nie Zhenzhao 42). "Natural will is similar to such primitive will as sexual instinct, and free will is closer to such a rational will as deliberate pursuit of a certain aim, while rational will is closest to ethical consciousness, which is concerned with the awareness of moral standard and the distinction between good and evil" (Shang Biwu 146). In reality, Lonoff is also confronted with the ethical choice between his wife, who has been his companion for many years but is no longer passionate, and his soul mate, Amy. Will he follow the ethical responsibility to maintain the family stability, continue the dreary marriage, and take responsibility, or adhere to his free choice crazy for art and start an immoral love?

His wife, Hope, a typical qualified wife, and mother, was born of gentle blood in New England. After marriage, she took good care of her husband and gave birth to three children. Later she lived in seclusion out of the crowd to support Lonoff's writing career. Thirty years' hard work had made the former noble lady become an old woman. "She was a smallish woman with gentle gray eyes and soft white hair and a multitude of fine lines crisscrossing her pale skin" (64). The inexorable passage of time has deprived Lonoff of his passion and romance for his perfectly obedient wife. The only thing left is habit and boredom between them and what connects them is not their mutual sincere feelings and empathy with each other, but the law. During the time when Lonoff was playing on words whole day, his wife was absolutely excluded from his world and was "materialized" as a "thing "without function and emotion, an invisible person. Although Hope had repeatedly obediently and tactfully reminded him: "his life had consisted of something more than reading and writing and looking at snow: it had also consisted of her and the children" (68), he still drove her out of his world. On Sundays when he had to walk up the maintain, he looked at his watch from time to time, showing that he was busy. "I'm nearly

crazy at the prospect of all those unusable hours. To avoid trouble, she makes me leave my watch at home. The result is that I look at my wrist instead. We're walking, she's talking, then I look at my wrist—and that generally does it, if my foul mood hasn't already" (Roth, The Ghost Writer 36-37). He could take Amy home without his wife's permit, allow her to sleep in his daughter, Becky's bed, play his daughter's piano, and under his wife's eyes, he entered his lover, Amy's room late at night and talk to each other, outrageously showing their intimate relationship. Finally, full of grievance, loneliness and anger, Hope threw a glass cup against the wall, and broke a plate into half to prove her existence, "I want you to chuck me out [...] I'd rather live and die alone, I'd rather endure that than another moment of your bravery! I cannot take any more moral fiber in the race of life's disappointments! Not yours and not mine! I cannot bear having a loyal, dignified husband who has no illusions about himself one second morel" (89). Lonoff just looked at the broken dish calmly and disapprovingly and said, "She can glue it" and then "In the kitchen he left the dish for her to repair on a long wooden counter" (96). The next day, he just hummed "my blue heaven", and pretended to be a clown, which immediately made Hope more happier. With a strong sense of male chauvinism, he thought his wife belonged to the kitchen. "It did indeed look to be the headquarters of a woman who, in her own unostentatious way, could glue anything and do anything, except figure out how to make her husband happy" (98). She was just his close nanny and loyal companion. Anyway, he manipulated all her joys and sorrows, and she is only his accessory.

However, in front of the young and attractive Amy, Lonoff is full of warmth. At the age of sixteen, Amy wrote to Lonoff for help and became his student. Over time, the unique charm of the young girl, their tacit resonance for literature, and the mutual appreciation of each other made the two lonely hearts get closer and even cross the moral boundaries of marriage. For Lonoff, she has "deep and quiet eyes, gentle and intelligent eyes" (78). When he first introduced Amy to Zuckerman, Lonoff couldn't help expressing his appreciation for her:

She has a remarkable prose style. The best student writing I've ever read. Wonderful clarity. Wonderful comedy. Tremendous intelligence. She wrote stories about the college which capture the place in a sentence. Everything she sees, she takes hold of. And a lovely pianist. She can play Chopin with great charm. She used to practice on our daughter's piano when she first came to Athene. That was something I looked forward to at the end of the day. (Roth 59) More importantly, the two had a similar identity: survivor of the massacre of Jews. Just as Nathan said, Lonoff was a Jew who got away. "You got away from Russia and the pogroms. You got away from the purges. You got away from Palestine and the homeland. You got away from Brookline and the relatives. You got away from New York" (106). And in Nathan's imagination, Amy was a "Jewish Saintess", who used to suffer a lot during the World War Two and survived the holocaust but concealed her identity. Similar experiences make the two more heart-to-heart, and they made joint efforts to build a world belonging to themselves, letting no one enter. When Amy left after work, Lonoff, who was always stingy with time, could stand on the doorstep, watching her clean the front and rear windows of the car, and say "drive slowly" (109). After he got into bed late at night, he could immediately drive to the hotel in New York for a few hours as soon as he received a call from Amy, listening patiently to Amy and comforting her broken heart until nine o'clock the next day. Sarcastically, he kept watching his watch when walking with his wife. For him, it seemed to be a waste of time staying with his wife, but eternal with Amy. Lonoff used to hesitate when Amy asked him to leave his boring wife and live a happy life with her in a villa outside Florence. He was very clear in heart, "[...] it is not our high purposes alone that make us moving creatures, but our humble need and cravings" (43). Even though, for his private property—his wife Hope, Lonoff couldn't abandon. On the one hand, he had become accustomed to the life mode in which she took good care of him and followed his orders with worship, letting himself "compose freely beyond annoyance of trifles". She was his private property, which he had the right to enjoy, but also had the responsibility to protect. "But how can I live alone?" (379) On the other hand, as a spiritual mentor worshipped by Nathan, deeply guided, and influenced by his own cultural norms, Lonoff could not and would not trample on family ethics and break through the prudent, rational, and moral barriers. "You don't chuck a woman out after thirty-five years because you'd prefer to see a new face over your fruit juice" (152). "You want a corpse on your conscience?" "We'd be what we've always been. Stop dreaming" (254). Eventually, Lonoff choose his ethical responsibility said goodbye to the emotional impulse, stopping the immoral love abruptly and returning to his family rationally.

In a way, Lonoff, the literary master is a contradictory person with dissociated personality. Anyhow, from literary creation to family life, he experienced a change from pursuing free choice to taking ethical responsibility. In literary creation, he could obey the drive of his free choice, and persistently put aside life, "crazing for art" in fantasy. However, in real life, Lonoff's human factor (rational will) conquers his animal factor (free choice), which forced him to "return to reality" (Roth 374).

At the end of the novel, Lonoff "opened the door", watched Amy go, and then went after the "escaping wife" (376). Eventually he maintained family ethics with ethical responsibility and took the responsibility of a husband.

### A Jewish Saint or an Ordinary Everyone—Amy's Ethical Choice

In The Ghost Writer, "Jewish Saintess" (Amy's identity) of is Nathan's inner illusion, which stemmed from a letter from Judge Wapt in which the latter would like to awaken his Jewish conscience by suggesting that he watch the play, Anne Frank's Diary, and the ambiguous dialogue between Amy and Lonoff overheard by Nathan when he boarded in Lonoff's house that night. Accordingly, Nathan developed his imagination and made up the sequel to The Diary of Anne Frank (1960) in which Anne, Lonoff's student and secret lover, was imagined to be a Jewish saintess who used to suffer the Holocaust during the World War II. Through this fiction, Nathan deconstructs the crucifixion consciousness complying with the traditional ethical orientation of Judaism, thus disintegrating the symbolic meaning of Anne in the traditional sense, removing the holy halo around her head, and restoring the holy figure to be a living, worldly woman with emotions and sensory pleasures.

At this moment, Amy was Anne Frank, who suffered a lot and survived the Holocaust. To forget the painful past, she renamed her Amy Belet and lived in England all the time. Later with Lonoff's help, she came to America and came across by chance her father's publication of The Diary of Anne Frank written by herself when she was detained in a backroom by Germans. Then she rushed to New York to watch the play adapted based on her diary. As a result, she cried hysterically and called Lonoff for help. But what should Amy or Annie do? Will she call his father immediately, tell him she is still alive, and then make farewell to the pain of separation and enjoy family reunion, or continue to conceal her identity? For the moment she was faced with a choice. Why was she so hesitated to make her free choice? In the theater, she was shocked by the atmosphere surrounding her, "But it was the women who frightened me [...] The women cried. Everyone around me was in tears" (261). In Jewish religious culture, suffering and sublime are often linked together, carrying the same connotation, which also makes the cultural philosophy of obtaining noble morality by suffering a great deal deeply rooted in the hearts of Jews. The Diary of Anne Frank displays Anne's noble qualities of strength, optimism, and kindness in dangerous and difficult circumstances, which are highly appreciated and admired, and people even regarded Anne as an excellent model of Jewry. Anne clearly realized that she had gradually changed from an innocent

persecuted girl to a Jewish image of a religious saint. "They weep for me said Amy;they pity me; they pray for me; they beg my forgiveness. I am the incarnation of the millions of unlived years robbed from the murdered Jews. It is too late to be alive now. I am a saint" (Roth, *The Ghost Writer* 321).

If she declared her survival, would it make her diary lose some of its power in the eyes of people? Amy felt bewildered and had to called Lonoff at midnight to ask for help from her lover. Ultimately, in order to maintain Anne's holy image of Jewish martyrs in people's hearts, she decided to "die" and not let her father know that she was still alive, "To keep her existence a secret from her father so as to help improve mankind [...]" (Roth 313)

If it were known that Anne's diary is written by a living girl, it would never have great meaning. Sadly, she thought, "I knew then what's been true all along: I'll never see him again. I have to be dead to everyone" (Roth 262). Her stereotyped religious ethics and moral sense forced her to reject family ethics. To maintain her own glorious image, "Saintess Anne" continued to act as a "ghost writer," and ruthlessly refused to get together with her father who also suffered in the concentration camp, causing them not to be reunited forever. However, the "dead" Amy seduced her teacher, Lonoff, who can be her father in age, which made her wife, Hope ran away from home. So, she failed to obey the family ethics and became a disgraced image.

Roth boldly writes the sequel to *The Diary of Anne Frank* and changed the "crucified heroine" in the eyes of thousands of people into an immoral woman who got involved in extramarital affairs, thus completely subverting Anne's image. After making the free choice, Anne bid farewell to the image of "Jewish martyrs" and "moral saintess" and became a secular woman destroying other's family happiness:

Oh, Manny, I want to live with you! That's what I need! I thought of the trips we'd take. I thought of the afternoons in the museums and haying coffee later by the river. I thought of listening to music together at night. I thought of making your meals. I thought of wearing lovely nightgowns to bed. Oh, Manny, their Anne Frank is theirs; I want to be your Anne Frank. I'd like at last to be my own. (Roth 330)

When her affectionate expression came across merciless rejection, her moral conscience also tormented her. Finally, in a quarrel with Hope, she ran away from Lonoff's house, just like runaway Anne Frank, driving into the cold snow. Amy bore the consequences for her free choice.

### Conclusion

Consciously or unconsciously, "literature inevitably reflects human nature and living conditions at different stages of humanity and shoulders the important mission of carrying the humanistic spirit in face of the relationships between people and reality" (Yi Zheng 73). Led by Roth, we come to a fantastic ethical scene, get acquainted with three writers—Nathan Zuckerman, a fledging young Jewish writer; Lonoff, a well-known Jewish writer in literature; and Amy, a Jewish girl who suffered and survived the Holocaust. We "witnessed" them struggling in ethical dilemmas and finally made ethical choices. Nathan acted as an "alter-ego", whose experience embodied many aspects of Roth's self-conflict. Whether falling into the trap of religious differences with his natives of Jews, or wandering and bewildering between reality and art? Nathan felt rather confused, because at the bottom of his heart there are always two conflicting voices in his ears, then he turned to Lonoff, his spiritual mentor for help. However, at that moment, Lonoff, the literary master himself was also struggling in the gulf of life and art. Along with the temptation of Amy, a young attractive girl, he was faced with severe test of family ethics. Lonoff's ethical choice in the end displayed his contradictions and ethical responsibility. Wandering between a suffering "Jewish saintess Anne" and a worldly ordinary girl, Amy finally chose the former after intense moral suffering, acting as a "ghost writer" and leaving Lonoff to get rid of the disgraceful role of an immoral woman.

The blood flowing in his body made Nathan recognize that he couldn't ignore and abandon his family and Jewish culture. He tried to ease and improve the relationship modern civilization and Jewish culture through Anne, the materialized saint image. Therefore, he fell in love with Amy, a fictional crucified Jewish saintess, who was an image of kindness, strength, and innocence and was in accordance with Nathan's father's recognition of his own national image. Nathan even imagined marrying Amy and having children, which demonstrates his confusion about self-positioning between modern civilization and Jewish culture. Anyway, Nathan just kept his love for Amy deep in mind and never showed his love to her; and Amy, obsessed with Lonoff, had no feeling for him, either. Finally, the two went their separate ways, which shows that Nathan's efforts to improve the relationship ended in vain, and he must make a choice to position himself. Through these protagonists' inner contradictions, confusion, uncertainty and helplessness, Roth perfectly interprets the living state of contemporary human beings for us.

Through this novel, Roth demonstrates his view on freedom which seems somewhat similar with Sartre's free choice. However, Roth transcends Sartre's view. "Sartre emphasizes free choice, which takes being as the only ethical criterion" (Chen Houliang 19). Roth emphasized the ethical choice of human beings, which is not measured by the existence of self-being, but by the recognition and maintenance of ethical norms that already exist in the public domain, which coincides with Nie Zhenzhao's view on ethical choice. In Roth's view, man is no longer a free individual from the moment he becomes a man, but "the existence of an ethic" (Philip Roth, New Perspectives on an American Author 59). The existence of human ethics means that he is always in relationship with people and needs to follow a variety of widely accepted and recognized ethical order. Through this autobiographical novel, Roth presents his views on ethics of literature: human ethical identity and responsibility are not restrictions on freedom. but mean mutual understanding, compassion, and tolerance. Therefore, the transformation and growth of the writer's ethical consciousness help him make the right ethical choice. In a word, by exhibiting the specific ethical choices the protagonists in his work are faced with, Roth helps us understand the whole selection process of life and get instruction and inspiration from it.

### **Works Cited**

Blake, Bailey. Philip Roth The Biography. London: Penguin Random House UK, 2021.

Chen Houliang, and Jia Yanyan. "Free Choice and Ethical Responsibility: A Dialogue Between Ethical Literary Criticism and Sartrean Existentialism." *Foreign Literature Studies* 39. 4 (2017): 19-20.

Elaine, M. Kauvar. "Talking about Philip Roth." Contemporary Literature 48. 4 (2007): 615.

Ilya, Ehrenburg. "Introduction to The Diary of Anne Frank." Soviet Review 1. 5 (1960): 56-61.

Jonathan, Webber. Reading Sartre: On Phenomenology and Existentialism. New York: Routledge, 2011.

Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Choice and Sphinx Factor." *Foreign Literature Study* 33. 6 (2011): 1-13.

—. Introduction to Literary Ethical Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.

Philip, Roth. The Ghost Writer. New York: New York Vintage, 1995.

—. New Perspectives on an American Author. Westport: Praeger Publishers, 2005.

Shang Biwu. "Ethical Literary Criticism and Ian McEwan's Nutshell." *Critique: Studies in Contemporary Fiction* 59. 2 (2018): 146-147.

Su Xin. "On Ethical Predicament of Philip Roth's Autobiographical Writing." *Foreign Literature Studies* 59. 2 (2018): 117-118.

Timothy, Parrish, ed. The Cambridge Companion to Philip Rot. New York: Cambridge UP, 2007.

Yi Zheng. "Ethical Literary Criticism and The Construction of Humanistic Spirit." *Journal of Dharma* 45. 1 (2020): 73-74.

## The Ethics of Technology: Reflection on Gendered Science in *Oryx and Crake*

### Zhu Xinzhu

Abstract: This paper discusses the gendered science and technology embodied in Margaret Atwood's science fiction *Oryx and Crake*. By analyzing the relationship between gender and science in the novel, it focuses on nature, women, and the people at the bottom. It further reveals that gendered science violates the ethics of technology and continuously marginalizes women and disadvantaged groups, nature, and the Other, making them victims in the development of science and technology and turning them into objectified symbols. Biotechnology and genetic technology, dressed in the cloak of science, have become patriarchal tools that violate technological ethics. Under the control of gendered science, nature has become a tool for mankind to grab benefits. Climate disasters and climate change have become the prelude to global ecological collapse. The disadvantaged groups under the new hierarchical system destroyed themselves along with the technomaniacs. In the story, the conflict between humans and technology is the game between technology and ethics. When science violates technology ethics and is gendered, we should find the "Zero hour" and start again.

**Keywords:** *Oryx and Crake*; gendered science; the ethics of technology; ethical choice; Margaret Atwood

**Author: Zhu Xinzhu** is Ph.D. Candidate in the college of foreign languages at Nankai University (Tianjin 300071, China). Her academic research focuses on British and American Literature (Email: tracyz96@foxmail.com).

标题:技术伦理:《羚羊与秧鸡》对性别化科学的反思

内容摘要:本文讨论加拿大作家玛格丽特·阿特伍德的科幻小说《羚羊与秧鸡》中的所体现的性别化科学与技术。通过分析小说中性别与科学的关系,本文聚焦自然、女性以及生活在底层的弱势群体,进而揭示性别化科学违背技术伦理,将女性和弱势群体、自然和自然界"他者"不断边缘化的过程,使他们沦为科技发展过程当中的受害者,变为被物化的符号。生物技术与基因技术披着科学的外衣,实则成为违背技术伦理的父权统治工具。

关键词:《羚羊与秧鸡》;性别化科学;技术伦理;伦理选择;玛格丽特·阿特伍德

**作者简介:** 朱新竹,南开大学外国语学院博士研究生,主要研究领域为英美文学。

#### Introduction

Science and technology are the important driving forces in the history of human development, and every major step forward in society contains significant progress in science and technology. Human beings improve their living environment and enhance their survivability through the constantly improving level of science and technology. However, the development of science and technology has also brought various moral dilemmas and ethical problems to human beings. The 21st century is the century of biology. The rapid development of genetic engineering and biotechnology has brought convenience but is also harmful to people. Many social and ethical issues also arise. Advances in science and technology have made unimaginable things a reality. "Can we do this?" becomes an ethical question. Advanced science and technology allow us to manipulate genes or even human will, not only changing animal species but also human nature, behavior, and fertility. Human beings began to act like gods, possessing the power of a creator.

At the beginning of the novel Oryx and Crake, the civilized world is devastated and in ruins. Snowman who has experienced catastrophe lives alone on the tropical seashore and degenerates into a semi-arboreal creature like a savage, suffering from severe heat, thirst, and hunger. "Literature does not exist in isolation; it is influenced at every moment by science and technology, as well as by other arts and disciplines" (Nie Zhenzhao, "The Interdisciplinary Development of Literature" 42). The only surviving human being and this catastrophic scene led to these questions, what happened to this world and why did Margaret Atwood write this story? Was there any ethical standard of human beings and nature in this world? In this story, technology comes first, especially genetic engineering. Scientists abuse these biotechnologies to modify the genes of plants, animals, and even humans. Science and technology are in the hands of predominantly male scientists, and science and technology are gendered. Biotechnology and genetic technology, disguised as science, have become the tools of patriarchal rule that go against technological ethics. Their sinful behavior raises many techno-ethical questions. How is science and technology gendered? How does gendered science violate the ethics of technology? What are the consequences of violating the ethics of technology? This paper will analyze the gendered science and the ethics of technology in Oryx and Crake from the following three aspects: the gendered science in this novel, how

gendered science violated the ethics of technology, and neglected humanity and animality.

## The Gendered Science in Oryx and Crake

Atwood once said that "Oryx and Crake is a speculative fiction, not a science fiction proper. It contains no intergalactic space travel, no teleportation, no Martians... it invents nothing we haven't already invented or started to invent" (Writing with Intent 285). She insists that Oryx and Crake is the "fact within fiction", and claims that "we've taken a path that is already visible to us" (Case & McDonald, "Life After Man" 41). The ecological disaster caused by a flood of future biotechnology predicted by Atwood in the novel is far more than just speculation or whimsy. And the biotechnology she conceived has already or is showing its power in the real world. The cloned sheep Dolly, genetically modified soybeans and corn, and iris recognition technology have already been created and are widely applied in human beings' daily life. According to the development speed of human technology at the current stage, it is speculated that shortly, pigoons (the transgenic intelligent creatures that are designed to provide cloned human organs), the chicken pacts that "are just the breasts [...] that specialize in drumsticks too, twelve to a growth unit" (Atwood 202), crakers who are the human-made ideal Human in Oryx and Crake may enter the real-life from the novel. Scholars, like Steven Best and Douglas Kellner, attempt to call attention to the potentially dangerous powers that science and technology in the age of biotechnology—a surreal zoo of mutations (The Postmodern Adventure 134). However, at the beginning of the story, it seems that science and biotechnology did greatly promote social development and help people to have a better life in a world under global climate change in which "the coastal aquifers turned salty and the northern permafrost melted and the vast tundra bubbled with methane, and the drought in the mid-continental plains regions went on and on, and the Asian steppes turned to sand dunes, and meat became harder to come by" (Atwood 24).

Science is not only distinguished but also separated from any other approaches of knowledge in Oryx and Crake. Atwood portrays two main opposite characters Jimmy-Snowman, an ordinary art college student who represents humanity, and Crake, the genius scientist in a top university who is the embodiment of science on purpose. When Crake invites Jimmy to his Paradise, the Bubble which is his major bioengineering experiment and the birthplace of crakers, Jimmy feels something has crossed the line. But Crake asked, "how much is too much, how far is too far" (Atwood 206). Crake, who doesn't believe in God and Nature, and doesn't believe in the value of humanity, enjoys being a "Creator" under the cover of biotechnology. When he becomes the symbol of science in this world, science has been "gendered" at the same time. Though Jimmy can't participate in scientific work, he still has the right to enter the scientific world, as the son of his father who is a scientist, and as a friend of Crake. However, the female characters have been completely expelled from the scientific world.

When science and technology become the only criterion for measuring human beings' achievement, there would be techno maniacs trying to deprive human beings of freedom and control their economy, and further control the spiritual world of human beings. Their subjectivity and humanistic values will gradually disappear. When a person loses his subjectivity and becomes a puppet or a robot, he has lost his human nature; and when the whole human race abandons art and tramples humanistic values underfoot, the development of human beings has come to an end. From the perspective of ethical literary criticism, "it argues that literature is a product of human ethics and a form of ethical expression at a particular stage of history" (Nie Zhenzhao et al, "Conversations on the Ethical Literary Criticism" 83). Technological ethics as part of human ethics is the special ethical expression in Anthropocene. However, facing technological ethical choices, scientists in this story seems to make the wrong decision which decivilized human society. Because the "ethical choice stage is the most important stage in the process of human civilization. At this stage, the ethical choice is the choice of human beings and the choice of human moralization" (Nie Zhenzhao et al, "Conversations on the Ethical Literary Criticism" 83). The arrogant idea of the techno-maniacs in Oryx and Crake is to destroy the individual's subjectivity, trample on the humanities, and completely control the spiritual world of human beings, and in this story, they have done it. In a male-dominated society, science and technology become tools for men to control nature, and gendered science dominates humanity while marginalizing women and people living in pleebland. These techno maniacs violated the ethics of technology. Technological ethics guides the behavior of technology so that the subject of technology not only considers the possibility of technology in the process of technological activities but also considers the purpose, means, and legitimacy of the consequences of its activities. Technological rationality under the constraints of technological ethics is the concept of human beings carrying out technological practical activities (humans transform nature, or create artificial nature), and it is the extraction and combination of various human rationales in a certain way and runs through technological practical activities in an integrated form. As far as its typical characteristics are concerned, technological rationality is a kind of human wisdom and ability to pursue rationality,

normativeness, effectiveness, functionality, ideality, and conditionality. However, in the story, the mad Adams pursue extreme technological rationality that ignores technological ethics. For mad Adams, upholding technological rationality is to see technology as a mere tool, to oppose technology to the body, and to regard them as a relationship of cooperation and dependence. In the story, scientists pursue the infinity and exploitability of the human body. In their eyes, the human body is just a manipulable object and a commodity that can be sold. Technological transformation makes these bodies marked.

"In fact, people have been to a great extent deindividualized. Their conformity is developing into something like uniformity" (Huxley 20). The subjectivity of the puppet-like man has completely disappeared, and the saddest thing of all is that, as a victim, he does not think that his spirit is being manipulated. But the truth is that in this invisible prison. "That he is not free is apparent only to other people. His servitude is strictly objective" (Huxley 85). For Ramona and Oryx in this story, it seems that one got the position in science and technology and the other hovering outside of it, yet both fail to escape the mental domination of the techno maniacs and eventually become non-subjective beings, marginalized by gendered science.

Ramona, a talented technician, seems to have a place in the techno maniac's Compound. However, through her false aura, she just plays the role of a secretary or an assistant in the office of OrganInc Farm, and in her daily life, she is only a lover of her boss (Jimmy's father). Ramona is only an attachment of the gendered science and these male techno-maniacs. But in daily life, Ramona is just a kind and lovely ordinary girl. She is not good at words, often talking like the chick in shampoo advertisements; eating like a child will eat hands full of greasy; biting her fingers while watching horror movies. However, these true feelings in the cold world of technology have long been worthless. In the eyes of the techno-maniacs, Ramona's only left value is her genius brain, so she has no freedom other than the right to sell her mind and talent, and sadly, she is used to losing such freedom.

At work, it was never her intelligence that she showed, nor was it her value that she achieved. After Jimmy's father jumped ship to Nooskins, she followed suit because she was part of the agreement, not because of her abilities or values. She is not herself; she exists by the existence of men, and her job position is limited to a list of terms on the agreement. In the path of science and technology, without the genius of her mind, Ramona has no room for survival; without a part of the terms of the agreement requested by Jimmy's father, Ramona cannot own the right to spend time with the one she loves. Facing the gendered science and technology, Ramona's

subjectivity is unable to fight against the ruthless rule of technology, and slowly, her subjectivity is worn away, becoming a marginalized woman in gendered science.

Oryx, wandering outside of science and technology, is also under its control of it. In her whole life, she never had subjectivity. Oryx plays the role of a doll, or a movie doll, following the orders of "they" (male characters). She will do whatever "they" tell her to do. She laughs when "they" tell her to laugh, she cries when "they" tell her to cry, and she does what "they" ask her to do to please all kinds of men. In short, the will of "they" is her will, she has no will herself, nor does she understand what is will, so much so that the word "they" has become deeply rooted in her soul. "They" is not a specific person who controls her body, but a person who has neither face nor eyes but controls her spirit world.

It is not only Oryx who loses her subjectivity, but also the disadvantaged people who are like Oryx in the pleebland. In the poor village where Oryx was born, the human trader Uncle Un was regarded as an honest businessman, a talisman against bad luck, and a great benefactor who saves the suffering people. Instead of hating him, the villagers fear him, please him and feel thankful to him. The girls are sold to the big cities where they are forced to perform sexually in pet stores, drugged and kept in garages, and even forced to pretend to be reptiles to please the buyers. However, like the villagers, they did not resent or rebel but only thanked and obeyed. Their masters gave them shelter and food, so that they could get rid of the misery of not having enough food and clothing, so they should be grateful to their "kind masters". Under the rule of gendered science and technology, people at the bottom have been completely desperate for society, they are useless in the world of technology, and can only be slaves to be driven by others. To live, they must abandon their subjectivity and willingly become the marginalized people in this society.

Oryx and Ramona, as well as the poor people on the margins of society, have become the victims of gendered science and techno maniacs. Their lack of awareness is what makes their subjectivity completely degraded. Because in a society where science and ideals are in the top position, emotions and spirits are cheap. Compromise and submissiveness can neither redeem nor save the people at the bottom of society, but only further foment the desire of these techno maniacs to dominate the whole world. The loss of human subjectivity means that human beings are gradually reduced to the tools of science and technology.

#### **Gendered Science: The Violation of Technological Ethics**

The Greek philosopher Protagoras claimed that "Of all things the measure is man,

of the things that are, that [or "how"] they are, and of things that are not, that [or "how"] they are not" (Diels and Krzna 80) may be the primitive evidence of human's arrogance. As we all know, human belongs to nature and cannot live apart from it. What we should do is to put ourselves in an equal position with nature, and learn how to harmonize with Earth Others, based on the ideals that we are both dependent creatures. In Oryx and Crake, those scientists consider themselves as Almighty and rebuild "Earth Others" out of their will. Men's interests and profits are in the priority. All other existence in the natural world is treated as instruments rather than lives.

From medieval theology, human centralism divided humans and nature into two single parts, leading to the illusion that human beings should control the natural world. After the period of industrial civilization, with the development of technology and the economy, human beings gradually immersed themselves in the achievements created by themselves but ignored the various ecological crises that appeared more frequently than before. The relationship between humans and nature comes to an emergent point. Through the memory of Snowman, the novel depicts a society once had highly developed technology. However, science and technology didn't become the cornerstone for the benefit of mankind but violated the ethics of technology and put human beings into endangered status. The background of this story directly put the opposition between humans and nature in front of readers.

It seems people in the 21st century all know that humans and nature are inseparable. Human beings' existence, as one of the branches of the natural ecosystem, depends on harmonious relationships with other creatures. The equal existence of each species maintains an ecological balance. From ancient times to the modern world, the relationship between humans and nature has gradually changed from close interdependence to confrontation and opposition to each other, which also can be seen through the setting between humans and the environment in the story. The background of Oryx and Crake is a world that has been ruined by Crake, a science and technology genius. As the "only" human being who survived, Snowman, Jimmy, struggles desperately in this wasteland. He lives alone on a tropical beach, without clothes, without a companion, or even without a real natural animal around him. Under the control of human beings, nature is no longer suitable for human habitation, and climate change is also too terrible for human beings to live. Snowmen can only look for food and clothing in the remaining garbage. At this moment, the story shows readers an image that humans and nature stand completely on the opposite side. There were no ethical standards among humans, nature, and technology. So, in this world, there is no way for Snowman to communicate with

any nonhuman creatures.

Crakers, the biotechnology transformation creatures created by Crake, are always around Snowman. They are the outcomes of gendered science which violated technological ethics. They are the perfect and updated human beings according to Crake's design. However, Snowman cannot communicate with them because they don't know the meaning of life and they cannot understand what culture, history, and art are but only can live according to their basic desire. Facing a group of human-like creatures, Snowman has no way to effectively make communication with them. As for other nonhuman creatures, what Snowman did is try his best to not be eaten by the pigoons, wolvogs, and other human-made creatures. Meanwhile, it is also impossible for Snowman to enjoy the sunshine because he doesn't have thick skin, like the crakers', which can resist ultraviolet in the daytime. It reminds readers that as a real human being, he lost his ability to live with nature and the relationship between him and nature turns into a confrontation between death and life. And following Snowman's memory, readers can also find that people in this world had tried their best to control nature.

"Creating an animal was so much fun [...] it made you feel like God" (51)<sup>1</sup>. The people in the compounds enjoy the feeling of a Creator who is beyond every creature including nature herself. Biotechnology is widely misused in this story. Animals completely become the subordination for those scientists who just genetically rebuild the animals according to their will and economic interests. However, it is like opening Pandora's Box, the scientists look down upon the power of nature. "A new form of the common house mouse addicted to the insulation on electric wiring had overrun Cleveland, causing an unprecedented number of house fires. Control measures were still being tested. A miniature rodent containing elements of both porcupine and beaver had appeared in the northwest, creeping under the hoods of parked vehicles, and devastating their fan belts and transmission systems" (216). They cannot control the new appearance of these strange creatures at all. At that moment, the war between humans and nature starts at the cost of the destruction of their original world. Abnormal status and unethical high technology reproduce countless screwy human-made creatures that originally do not exist in the natural world. These insane and twisted descriptions and creatures are the outcomes of gendered science. They regard it as a patriarchal utopia that annihilates life and diversity. Because men cannot reproduce new life in the world and they lost the ability to cooperate with nature, the male power replaces the flesh-and-blood life

<sup>1</sup> Margaret Atwood, *Oryx and Crake*, New York: Anchor Books, 2004. All references are to this edition will be cited hereafter in parentheses.

with artificial life out of the jealousy of women. They not only seek methods to control and oppress women but also attempt to control other natural creatures, even nature herself. During the process of confronting each other, climate change is not only its background setting but also one of the serious consequences caused by it.

Climate change in this novel indicates the future confrontation between humans and nature. "Strange to think of the endless labour, the digging, the hammering, the carving, the lifting, the drilling, day by day, year by year, century by century; and now the endless crumbling that must be going on everywhere. Sandcastles in the wind" (45). Human beings treat nature as an object which can be used casually and endlessly. And it seems that people in this world have gotten used to living with climate change and their present status. Facing a world greatly changed by climate, they built the Compounds one after another to avoid this problem. They are so indulged in the illusion of a peaceful life in the Compounds which has been separated from nature. From the ineffective communication, human beings' attempt on controlling nature as well as their ambition to be the Creator, and the destruction caused by climate change, people in this world did nothing but put themselves on the opposite side of nature. And the deep reason for such confrontation between humans and nature is the patriarchal opinions in their subconsciousness. They not only separated themselves from nature but also attempt to build a new hierarchy of society in their world. With the equipment of advanced science and technology, those arrogant scientists believe that they can do anything they want. They never believe in God as well as Nature with a "capital N". They neglected moral standards and violated the ethics of technology. They also look down upon the laws of nature and try to rebuild the world and recreate the natural creatures of their will. Crake is a typical representative of these scientists.

Crake also holds this idea towards nature. In the world of Oryx and Crake depicted by Atwood, biotechnology is widely used, especially on animals. Animals completely become the subordination for those scientists. For example, when Jimmy saw the terrible sight of a genetically modified chicken, he was shocked. That was the new version of chicken in Oryx and Crake. They looked like large bulblike objects that seemed to be covered with stippled whitish-yellow skin. Out of it came twenty thick fleshy tubes, and at the end of each tube, another bulb was growing. They are no longer chickens anymore. They have lost their own lives and just exist as a food resource for human beings. There is another example of "pigoon project". The goal of this project is to produce an assortment of foolproof humantissue organs in transgenic knockout pig host-organs that would transplant smoothly and avoid rejection. A rapid-maturity gene is spliced into the pigoon kidneys and livers, and hearts would be ready sooner, and now they are perfecting a pigoon that could grow five or six kidneys at a time. Pigoons can be used to provide cloned nerve systems as well. There are also pigoons at Nooskins that are used to develop skin-related biotechnologies. The main idea was to find a method of replacing the older epidermis with a new one, "not a laser-thinned or dermabrader short-term resurfacing but a genuine start-over skin that would be useful to grow a young, plump skin cell that would eat up the worm cells in the skins" (Atwood 64). That is the fate of animals in *Oryx and Crake*. They are no longer independent individuals but just tools that provide profits for human beings. When those scientists genetically change and create animals, they neglect that animals have the same rights to live on this planet just like human beings. In their opinion, human beings own the right to dominate other creatures because animals just exist for human beings rather than for their own.

Those amazing "products" seem to make people's lives better. However, people cannot avoid the potential dangers hiding behind these perfect facts. For example, pigoons were supposed to be tusk-free, but maybe they were reverting to the original type so that they would become feral. This will be a fast-forward process because of their rapid-maturity genes. The cane toad "with a prehensile tale like a chameleon's that might climb in through the bathroom window and blind you while you were brushing your teeth" (59). All those bio-engineered experiments carried out by scientists are like opening Pandora's box.

Human beings tasted the bitter fruit of their behavior and realized that we need to re-recognize our position on the planet. Compared with the world of nature, plants, and animals that exist for billions of years on this planet, we are just newcomers. Nature runs itself very well without humans. We are the parasites on the food chain of life, consuming too much, but putting too little back to restore and maintain the ecosystem. Jimmy was very upset with so many crazy interferences with the natural world, which may reveal the author's thoughts to the readers. He often dreams of coming back to an age where everything is what it should be in the natural environment. He also remembered the picture he watched on old DVDs when he was a child. Those animal-behavior programs feature copulation and growling and innards and mothers licking their young. "Why had he found them so reassuring?" (10) It might be the question that the author wants to ask Crake and other lunatic people. In "The Power and Promise of Ecological Feminism" Karen J. Warren argues that there exists a conceptual link among all the systems of domination which she calls the "logic of domination" (Warren 128). The logic of domination justifies the subordination of one group to another by positing some

differences between two groups and associating one with moral inferiority. This logic combines with other features of oppressive conceptual frameworks such as value-hierarchical thinking and value dualisms to justify the subordination of women and nature. For example, the logic of domination is used to argue that humans are morally superior to plants and rocks because humans can consciously and radically change the communities in which they live while plants and rocks cannot (Warren 125). Due to the excessively developed biotechnology, animals in Oryx and Crake are under the domination of those scientists. The random alteration of these animals is not considered a moral issue. But Jimmy's mother is an exception. She expresses her strong disgust toward the idea of excessive genetic alteration on those animals. She made a clear statement about that, "It's wrong, the whole organization is wrong, it's a moral cesspool and you know it" (56). She speaks out about Atwood's judgment.

Human beings become stronger by equipping themselves with advanced science. Since they don't believe in the law of nature anymore, they are afraid of nothing, and they just do whatever they want. They violated the ethics of technology. Their ambition bulges rapidly, then they begin to challenge the power of nature, more exactly, they identify themselves as God. Those scientists in Oryx and Crake are holding this kind of idea. They believe that human beings are the only creatures that have intrinsic values. Therefore, animals are viewed as just a resource for the living and development of human beings. Human beings only have responsibilities for their species and an indirect obligation to nature. In such a world, without the constraints of technological ethics, these techno maniacs also blurred the line between humanity and animality by building up the Compound and Pleebland.

#### Gendered Science: The Ignorance of Humanity and Animality

In Oryx and Crake. A new hierarchy is set up—Compound and Pleebland. Gendered science drove marginalized people into Pleebland while building the firm castle for the male techno maniacs who rule society.

In the novel, a Compound is a place where the wealthy privileged classes and scientists live. It is called a "composite concentrated residential area", strictly guarded, and monitored by the security guards and company guards. Tall walls isolated them from the outside world. The compounds are also the symbol of science and biotechnology. These so-called upper-class people live in different compounds with different walls. And the big companies, like OrganInc Farms and NooSkins which run different compounds, are highly competitive. They even send secret agents to other companies to steal trade secrets, and technical secrets, or do

some sabotage activities. There is no "reciprocity" among different authorities as well as the people in them. The development of science and biotechnology only brings deeper alienation and gap between people in the power center and those in the marginal position. The compounds segregate so-called superior people from the outside world, believing everything outside the walls is filled with danger and backwardness. It is a superior area, a sublime area, and a decision-making area. The upper-class people in compounds can decide everything about whether it should exist or not. Other places are low-level areas contaminated with viruses, dirty, and inferiority. People who live in the compounds, although they have been selected as the senior technical talents, are still being watched, and a sense of suspicion infiltrates every single part of this space. Everyone who lives here should be checked and disinfected when they come into the compounds. The symbol of the Compounds indicates that the illusion of patriarchy in the capitalist market has gone to the climax. Culture, science, education, and all superstructures succumb to the rule of hierarchy and patriarchal ideology. The development of science and technology doesn't bring union and cooperation but new hierarchy and segregation, forcing people who cannot access scientific work into the second position.

Contrary to the compounds, the pleeblands, in the novel, are described as "endless billboards and neon signs and stretches of buildings, tall and short; endless dingy-looking streets, countless vehicles of all kinds, some of them with clouds of smoke coming out the back; thousands of people, hurrying, cheering, rioting [...]" (27). The pleeblands are the home of people who lost the ability to enter the scientific world. The face of the person here appears in an image that has been transformed and deformed. This smoky and sloppy image of the bottom space makes people who live in the compounds have a sense of superiority and look down upon the people in the pleeblands. The new hierarchy is built at the same time. The pleeblands are an area that has no meaning other than buying and selling as well as crimes and dangers. The people in pleeblands have a sense of destruction and degeneration because they have lost their voices in this scientific world. Consultative capacity makes no sense to them. Only through buying and selling can they obtain their meaning in life.

Compared with the compounds, although the pleeblands are a social institutional space that opposes the natural environment, and Atwood also criticizes and denies this space, it is at least true and real whose ideology is more acceptable than the hypocritical compounds. The compound is an illusory space that is artificially isolated and full of unreality. It looks clean and tidy, which owns everything, such as the upper-level life and the safer living environment.

The highly educated geniuses who live in this place should have become human models and pursued higher moral standards and behavioral norms. However, through the monopoly of technology, they can control prices, gain profits, and obtain unrestricted material satisfaction in the market. They even can manipulate people in the pleeblands. The BlyssPluss Pill Crake created has three aims which can benefit people in the pleeblands, but it has the fourth function, "which would not be advertised. The BlyssPluss Pill would also act as a sure-fire one-time-doesit-all birth-control pill, for males and females alike, thus automatically lowering the population level. When people in compounds attempt to manipulate other groups of people, people being manipulated have been objectified and marginalized by scientific authority. People in pleeblands have been separated from science and high technology. They are only the target of the market and are considered the symbol of economic profits for biotechnological products. They are also objectified and marginalized images whose life and futures are decided according to the needs of the manipulators.

However, the manipulators, also the people in compounds, are more hypocritical than the pleeblands. Their desires are hidden behind the tidy and decent surface, which is hypocritical, greedy, cold, ruthless, and rigid. The value of people in the compound only can be decided by the level of popularization of their technologically produced products the benefits and profits. It seems impossible for people to not equate winning with being right. Driven by high economic profits, the development of science and biotechnology gradually crosses the line. For them, the compound is their castle, anywhere else in the world is just the experimental fields that have no relationship with them. When the compounds and pleeblands were built with the development of science and biotechnology, not only people in the pleeblands are objectified and marginalized but also the people in the compounds who separated themselves from nature and humanity. They are the kings and dukes in the castle who lost their identities as real human being and their ability to love, care and communicate.

Objectification and marginalization lead to the rebellion of the people being dominated. Some awakened people who attempt to fight against the compounds are doomed to be eliminated because on the one hand, they have been marginalized by science, on the other hand, what they did are against the requirements and interests of the development of science and biotechnology, and the secrets about the compounds cannot be uncovered. Therefore, Jimmy's mother and Crake's parents can only disappear for various strange reasons, such as treason and accidental death. The inflated desire for control, extreme insolence, and self-centralism are

the basic characteristics of the compounds that also reflect the features of science and biotechnology in this story. For the marginalized people, their misery ending is doomed by the political space of the compound where science and biotechnology dominate the social consciousness. People in the pleeblands, especially women, in this story are all the marginalized images and victims of science and biotechnology.

#### Conclusion

Different from the rapid development of modern science and technology, ethics and moral standards of science and technology are gradually being neglected. *Oryx and Crake* call on people to pay more attention to humanities, arts, and technological ethics. By analyzing the relationship between gender and science in this novel, this paper focuses on nature, women, and disadvantaged groups living at the bottom, and then reveals the process of gendered science violating the ethics of technology and marginalizing women and disadvantaged groups, nature and the Other, so that they become victims in the process of technological development and become objectified symbols. The conflict between people and technology in this story is a game between technology and ethics. When science violates technology ethics and is gendered, we should find the "Zero hour" and start again.

The apocalyptic scene depicted in Oryx and Crake has tried to warn readers to reflect on the moral responsibility and ecological care that human civilization should undertake to human beings and the natural environment, how to serve the common interests of all mankind, and how to find the sustainable way for science and technology development. As Nie Zhenzhao said, "Literature can enlighten and instruct us. Literary writing can provide examples of how we should make ethical choices when disaster strikes. When the disaster occurs, we face more choice challenges between ourselves and others, between public and private, between life and death, between happiness and pain, and we are bound to accept the test of ethical choice" ("Disaster Shock, Ethical Choice and Literary Narrative" 188). The development of human society requires the leading role of science and technology, but it is even more inseparable from the guiding role of the ethics of technology which can make the right ethical choice. All human activities that violate the laws of natural development will lead human beings into a morbid society. The ethical issues of modern technology are the shared responsibility and obligation of all mankind. We need to rationally handle various conflicts of interest, maximize the benefits of scientific and technological achievements to all human beings, and try our best to avoid the negative impact of improper use of them on the whole society. Only in this way can the development of modern science and technology be more

vigorous and benefit human beings under the guidance of the ethics of technology.

#### **Works Cited**

- Atwood, Margaret. Oryx and Crake. New York: Anchor Books, 2004.
- -... Writing with Intent: Essays, Reviews, Personal Prose: 1983-2005. New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, 2005.
- Best, Steven and Douglas Kellner. The Postmodern Adventure: Science, Technology, and Cultural Studies at the Third Millennium. New York: Guilford Press, 2001.
- Case, Eleanor and Maggie McDonald. "Life after Man." Interview. New Scientist 178.2393. 3 May 2003: 40-43. Available at: <a href="http://www.newscientist.com/opinion/opintreview.jsp">http://www.newscientist.com/opinion/opintreview.jsp</a> ?id=ns23931>.
- Diels, Hermann, and Walther Kranz. The pre-Socratic Fragments. Berlin: Weidmann, 1952.
- Huxley, Aldous. Brave New World Revisited. New York: Harper &Row, 1958.
- 聂珍钊: "文学跨学科发展——论科技与人文学术研究的革命",《外国文学研究》2 (2021): 31-43.
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "The Interdisciplinary Development of Literature: The Revolution of Science and Technology and Academic Research in Humanities." Foreign Literature Studies 2 (2021): 31-43.
- ---: "灾难冲击、伦理选择与文学叙事", 《浙江学刊》1(2022): 182-188。
- [-.. "Disaster Shock, Ethical Choice and Literary Narrative." Zhejiang Academic Journal 1 (2022): 182-188.
- 聂珍钊等: "文学伦理学批评与文学跨学科前沿(笔谈)", 《华中师范大学学报(人文社会 科学版)》2(2022):79-105.
- [Nie Zhenzhao et al. "Conversations on the Ethical Literary Criticism and the Frontier of Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature." Journal of Central China Normal University (Humanities and Social Sciences) 2 (2022): 79-105.]
- Warren, Karen. "The Power and the Promise of Ecological Feminism." Environmental Ethics 12.2 (1990): 125-146.
- Tu Weiming. "Beyond the Enlightenment Mentality." Worldviews and Ecology, edited by Mary Evelyn Tucker and John A. Grim. Lewisburg: Bucknell UP, 1993. 19-29.

# "克隆"视角下《雍固执传》的文学伦理学批评解读 Interpretation of Ethical Literary Criticism in Onggojipjeon from the Perspective of "Clone"

林雪琪(Lin Xueqi) 朴宰雨(Jae Woo Park)

内容摘要: 21世纪是人工智能迅猛发展,克隆技术硕果颇丰的时代,此时回望"前科技时代"的文学经典,会对古代人的早期科学幻想有新认识。18世纪朝鲜王朝时期创作的小说《雍固执传》表述了古代人对"克隆人"的初期构想,尽管故事借助了宗教和法术等有局限的手段,但对"克隆人"的描写引发了一系列伦理问题思考。论文基于文学伦理学批评方法论,以人工智能的新视角切入,审视小说中真假主人公的伦理身份和伦理选择,思考"克隆"带来的伦理混乱和克隆人悲剧命运,传达惩恶扬善的伦理价值,并探究这类"原型科幻"对韩国科幻小说发展的影响。

关键词:《雍固执传》;文学伦理学批评;克隆;伦理身份;伦理混乱 作者简介:林雪琪,韩国外国语大学博士研究生,主要研究方向为中韩近现 代转型期比较文学;朴宰雨,韩国外国语大学荣誉教授、中国教育部国家级 人才讲座教授、陕西师范大学人文社会科学高等研究院特聘研究员、中国社 科院《当代韩国》韩方主编等,主要研究韩中比较文学、鲁迅与中国现当代 文学。

**Title:** Interpretation of Ethical Literary Criticism in *Onggojipjeon* from the perspective of "Clone"

**Abstract:** The twenty-first century is a time of rapid development of artificial intelligence and the fruitfulness of cloning technology. Looking back from this point at the literary classics of the "pre-science and technology era", we'll have a new understanding of the scientific fantasies of our predecessors. A novel written during the Joseon dynasty in the eighteenth century, *Onggojipjeon*, expresses the early ideas of the ancients about "human cloning", and although the story draws on a range of limited means, including religion and spells, the depiction of "human cloning" raises a number of ethical questions. Based on the methodology of Ethical Literary Criticism and from a new perspective of the era of artificial intelligence, this paper examines the ethical identities and ethical choices of the real and fake protagonists in *Onggojipjeon*, explores the ethical confusion caused by "cloning" and the tragic

fate of the clones, conveys the ethical value of punishing evil and promoting good and investigates the impact of such "Prototype of Science Fiction" on the development of Korean science fiction novels.

**Keywords:** *Onggojipjeon*; ethical literary criticism; Clone; ethical identity; ethical confusion

Authors: Lin Xueqi is Ph.D. Candidate at Hankuk University of Foreign Studies (Seoul 02450, South Korea). Her main research interest is in the field of comparative literature of China and Korea during the modern transition period (Email: linxq0104@163.com). Jae Woo Park is Professor Emeritus of Hankuk University of Foreign Studies, Chair Professor of National Grade of the Ministry of Education of China, Distinguished Researcher of Institute for Advanced Studies in Humanities and Social Sciences of Shaanxi Normal University, and Korean Editor-in-Chief of Contemporary Korea of the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences. He mainly studies comparative literature between Korea and China, and Lu Xun and contemporary Chinese literature (Email: pjw9006@hanmail.net).

21世纪人类迎来了第四次工业革命,进入人工智能时代,基因工程蓬勃发展,克隆技术日益成熟,克隆人也成为一大科幻小说题材。此时,我们将目光倒回"前科技时代",虽然那时人类还没有充分的科学知识去解读自然现象,但也秉持着科学精神进行朴素幻想。在东西方的宗教神话、民间故事和古典小说中,往往都能发现"造人"的故事,如盘古捏泥人,女娲抟土造人,亚当肋骨造人等等。这些故事表达了古代人对克隆技术的初步构想和对未知世界的想象,可以算作科幻小说的萌芽。韩国的科幻小说也在历史长河中逐步发展,韩国学者高章源在《韩国科幻小说如何存续至今:韩国科幻小说百年史》中追溯了韩国的"原型科幻(proto-SF)"。早在18世纪朝鲜王朝古典小说《雍固执传》中就出现了"克隆人"的影子,虽然使用法术和稻草造人的设定存在着一些时代局限性,但从多个角度详细描摹了"克隆人"给人类带来的伦理冲击和社会影响,具有重要意义。1

《雍固执传》推测创作于朝鲜王朝英、正祖年间,由板索里"雍固执打令"改编而来。<sup>2</sup>朝鲜古典文学家金三不在1908年将古水朴窗玉和李明善的两个"雍固执打令"藏本补充整理为约1万5千字左右的短篇小说。1950年,金

<sup>1 《</sup>雍固执传》在韩国科幻小说发展中的作用可参见高章源:《韩国科幻小说如何存续至今: 韩国科幻小说百年史》,首尔: BOOKK, 2017年,第41页。

<sup>2 &</sup>quot;雍固执打令"作为板索里十二部之一,最先被记录于宋晚载所编板索里集《观优戏》中,而后在郑鲁湜著板索里历史文献《朝鲜唱剧史》中也有阐述。可惜的是,"雍固执打令"未以说唱形式流传下来。

三不校注本¹发行后,韩国学界正式开始对《雍固执传》进行研究。直到20世纪70年代末,该版本都是众多学者研究参考的唯一版本。²本文亦选取这一版本为基础本进行研究。主人公雍固执是一名吝啬贪婪、恶贯满盈的财主,他对家人不孝无礼,对乡亲无恶不作,对前来劝告的和尚也棍棒相向。为了教训他,月出峰翠庵寺的和尚用法术和稻草"克隆"出一个假雍固执,通过"真假争主"取代了他的身份和地位。真雍固执被逐出门,四处流浪,最终在和尚的帮助下认错悔过,痛改前非。和尚也收回了稻草人,还真雍固执一个完整的家。作为韩国科幻小说的萌芽,先行研究却往往忽略了科幻性,只关注版本、宗教、道德等问题,甚至文中自然人与"克隆人"的身份对立,引发的伦理混乱等许多值得探讨的伦理问题都缺乏研究。因此,本文通过"克隆"新视角,以文学伦理学批评为方法论进行探讨。从身份诉求、脑文本、伦理混乱和伦理价值四个方面,结合"恐惑"、"复影"和"他者"等学术用语来剖析小说中自然人的身份危机和克隆人的物化悲剧,同时挖掘这类"前科技时代"下"软科幻"³中文学、科技与伦理的关系,维护传统道德价值体系,尊重人的生存价值,具有丰富的现实意义。

### 一、真假争主: 谁是真正的雍固执?

# (一)身份诉求:丧失 vs 取代

文学伦理学批评注重对人物伦理身份的分析, "在文学文本中,所有伦理问题的产生往往都同伦理身份相关"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》263)。伦理身份不仅缔结了特定伦理关系,也是社会认同的前提。

小说中,真雍固执是普通人、自然人,而假雍固执,虽然是和尚通过法术制作出来的稻草人,但外貌和性格与真雍固执别无二致。小说中的法术其实就是克隆技术的初步构想,法术造人就如同使用生物技术构建人类生命,被构建的"人类"不管是从生命本质还是社会伦理上看,都不是传统定义的自然人,而是新人类。但是假雍固执与一般的新人类又有所不同。一方面,他未经母体诞生,而是由和尚制造,被植入了行动指令与数字文本,且在接受科学改造的同时也能用科学改进自己,例如,他能根据儿媳的描述在头上

<sup>1</sup> 文中有关《雍固执传》的内容说明均参考《裴裨将传.雍固执传》,金三不校注,首尔:国际文化馆版,1950年,第89-111页。

<sup>2 《</sup>雍固执传》的研究情况可参见 Oh, Soo Min, "Variation of Subject Consciousness on the Ending of the *Onggojipjeon*." 2020. Chungbuk National University, Master's Thesis,以及崔来沃: "雍固执传的诸问题研究",《东洋学》19(1989): 4。可确认的《雍固执传》异本数量是18本,这些版本的故事整体脉络是一致的,但大部分出于遗漏、保管等多种原因不予公开。

<sup>3</sup> 软科幻(Soft Science Fiction)是科幻小说分支之一,主要在科幻背景下描写社会、人文、伦理等问题,以突出人与人的关系。

变出伤疤和白发。从这一特性看,他属于仿生人<sup>1</sup>,是科学选择的结果;另一方面,他有着和真雍固执一模一样的外貌与性格,也有属于人类的伦理意识,有自己的伦理选择,比如,他不仅能选择用善良或是恶劣的态度对待周边人,也能与妻子相爱,共同孕育孩子。从这一特征看,他是一个克隆出来的新生命。因此可以说,假雍固执是"前科技时代"局限下想象出的,兼具仿生人和克隆人特性的新人类,有着"科学选择"与"伦理选择"的双重特质。本文更多探讨的是假雍固执的克隆特性,因此且称他为"克隆人"。

从这个意义上来看,"克隆人"的存在重新定义了人类的生命本质,模糊了人的界限,带来社会身份、人际关系等问题。因此,无论是自然人还是克隆人,都产生了身份诉求,需要获得身份认同。

首先,对真假雍固执双方来说,他们的关系是二元对立的。科幻小说中,克隆人往往作为自然人的"复制品"、"替代品"被制作出来。从后现代文化角度观照,他们的关系就像"原本(original)"和"摹本(copy)"。"原本"是"摹本"的母体、起源和归宿,"摹本"是"原本"的异化物、替代品。<sup>2</sup>然而,作为替代品的克隆人有人类的伦理意识,是作为个体存在的。所以,当"原本"和"摹本"相遇,他们彼此都产生了身份困惑,想弄清自己是谁的同时,也有着各自的身份诉求,企盼确立属于自己的伦理身份和伦理关系。

其次,对真雍固执来说,假雍固执的出现让他感到既陌生又熟悉。根据弗洛伊德的"恐惑(uncanny)"³理论,假雍固执就像他的"复影(double)"。他看到"克隆人",如同在镜像中看到一个熟悉而又陌生的自己,产生了"我是谁?他又是谁?"的身份迷惑。拉康在《论焦虑》中阐述,"当'复影'于主体我之外独立存在并自行行动时,主体我的主体性就被严重质疑和异化"(转引自 王素英 14)。"克隆人"的出现,迫使真雍固执产生捍卫伦理身份的诉求。他被"克隆人"取代了身份和地位,置于人工智能的宏大语境下,就是克隆人取代了自然人,科学选择取代了伦理选择。"复影"的出现必然造成在本文伦理环境中二者伦理身份关系的对立。

再次,对假雍固执来说,他是一个被制作出来的工具,是被"客体化"的人、社会上的"他者",无法先天取得主体性。但是,他也渴望获得人类的伦理身份。这就造成了"工具身份"与"自我追求"对立的矛盾,为了摆脱这一矛盾,他就必须要取代真雍固执。由于伦理身份是个体在伦理关系中

<sup>1</sup> 仿生人(Android)是指模仿真人而制造的机器人,他的脑文本和行动指令都是人工设定的。关于仿生人的特征,可参见刘靓: "小说《仿生人会梦见电子羊吗?》的文学伦理学解读",《英语广场》1(2021): 3-7。

<sup>2</sup> 自然人与克隆人之间"原本"和"摹本"的关系阐释,可参见 郭雯: 《克隆科幻小说的文学伦理学批评研究》,南京:南京大学出版社,2019年,第62页。

<sup>3</sup> 自然人与克隆人之间"原本"和"摹本"的关系阐释,可参见 郭雯: 《克隆科幻小说的文学伦理学批评研究》,南京:南京大学出版社,2019年,第62页。

的归属和定位,是人被社会认可和接受的关键,他只有建立与他人、社会的 伦理关系,获得人际交往中的身份认同,才能真正获得伦理身份,拥有社会 属性。

要取代真雍固执,仅凭体内设置好的,复制了真雍固执记忆和行动的指令是不够的,他还需要灵活运用自己的理性意志「进行伦理选择,以取得真假对决的胜利。"真假争主"对决是全文最大的伦理结,通过家人、朋友和官衙三方考察,找出谁是真正的雍固执。假雍固执为了获胜费了不少心思,一开始为取得家人信任,他表现得和真雍固执一样嚣张跋扈,让周围人都以为他是真的。到了官衙,他又准确运用理性意志判断形势,调取有效记忆,成功说服城主<sup>2</sup>,占有了真雍固执的伦理身份。而后为巩固伦理身份,他一改真雍固执往常的恶劣行径,以友好态度待人,获得了家人、朋友的支持。他成功的关键在于懂得运用理性意志来抑制欲望,做出与真雍固执截然相反、有人情味的选择。二者的伦理选择(ethical choice)对比如下表所示。

伦理选择	真雍固执	假雍固执
对待母亲	喂掺有石头的粥, 诅咒母亲	孝顺母亲
对待妻儿	不做家务, 使唤家人	关心、爱护、称赞妻子
对待周边人	性格恶劣,臭名昭著,厌恶佛教	善待朋友和邻居

通过理性意志的指导,假雍固执稳固了自己的社会关系,至此,他完全取代了真雍固执原有的身份,成为社会上认可的自然人。而这一行动,引发了"人"的身份界定的混乱性,即自然人可能成为社会的"他者",克隆人也能变成自然人。这种"复影"身份的转换打破了人与克隆人的二元对立关系,模糊了他们彼此的身份界线。可见,克隆技术的运用,很可能会动摇人的本体论和伦理关系,导致人类沦为"他者"、"客体",甚至有可能丧失人权和生命。

### (二)记忆对决: 脑文本 vs 数字文本

在文学伦理学批评视域中,文本有三种基本形态,分别是脑文本、物质文本和数字(电子)文本,其中"脑文本"是人类特有的"一种特殊的生物形态,是人的大脑以记忆形式保存的对事物的感知和认识"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》270),"数字文本"是"以数字形式储存的文本形式"(250)。假雍固执作为科学选择的产物,取胜的关键在于全知全能的记忆系统,这和人工智能的纪录系统类似,可以看作脑中置入了数字文本。人类的个体

<sup>1</sup> 文学伦理学批评认为,人类的伦理选择实质上是做人还是做兽的选择,区分人与兽的核心就在于"斯芬克斯因子",它表现为自然意志(兽性因子—原欲)、自由意志(兽性因子—欲望)和理性意志(人性因子—理性),当人性因子约束了兽性因子,人才会做出正确的伦理选择。具体可参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第 38-39 页。2 城主是《雍固执传》小说中案件的审判人。

和行为受大脑控制,而"克隆人"的行为受置入的数字文本控制,<sup>1</sup>所以,真 雍固执和假雍固执的伦理选择,很大程度上取决于脑文本与数字文本的不同。 两者的储存能力,在"真假争主"情节中清晰可见。

考察人	真雍固执	假雍固执	
家人	因为假雍固执抢占先机而错失	准确说出儿媳结婚情景和与妻子的相遇相知。	
	开口机会。		
朋友	因为假雍固执抢占先机而错失	主动说出朋友名字和见面间隔时间,还多次	
	开口机会。	说出真雍固执的口头禅"哎呦哎呦"。	
官衙	只记得父亲和爷爷的名字。	详细说明自己的名字由来,父亲身份、祖辈	
		信息、家庭财产、家具摆放等等。	

对决时,真雍固执记忆模糊,而假雍固执正确说出了家人名字和族谱情况,甚至连家具的摆放位置都一清二楚。心理学认为,识记过的材料不能提取,或提取时发生错误,都会产生遗忘。<sup>2</sup>人类的脑文本会随着时间流逝而遗忘,也会随着肉身的消亡而消失,而置入的数字文本则可以被随时提取,不存在遗忘情况。但在审讯案子的官衙眼里,提供越多的真实信息越能证明人物身份,保证案件审理结果的正确性。因此,真雍固执因为遗忘而错失了自证清白的机会,反倒是假雍固执因提取了更完整、更清晰的记忆而被判胜诉。

此外,真雍固执最终改过自新的伦理选择也离不开脑文本的作用。文学伦理学批评认为,"一个人的思想和行为是由脑文本决定的,一个人的伦理和道德也是由脑文本决定的(……)在伦理选择的过程中,人的伦理意识开始产生,善恶的观念逐渐形成,这都是脑文本发生作用的结果"(聂珍钊,"脑文本和脑概念的形成机制与文学伦理学批评"33-34)。真雍固执本来是一个薄情寡义之人,他的伦理选择受欲望支配,当他被取代伦理身份后,开始回顾、反思自己之前所作所为,对善与恶有了新的思考。孟子曾谈及人与兽的本质区别,即只有人类能够知晓礼义廉耻和善恶荣辱³,懂得以理性意志约束欲望。最终,真雍固执的人性因子战胜了兽性因子,决定弃恶从善,重新做人。这一过程也是本文的伦理线,真雍固执从恶到善的转变,可见脑文本有促使人知晓善恶观念,进行正确伦理选择的作用。

<sup>1</sup> 根据前文,假雍固执兼具数字文本和脑文本。但在"真假争主"环节,他取胜的方式是通过"数字文本"提取预设记忆,从而完美作答。因此,这里不对其"脑文本"的作用过多论述。

<sup>2</sup> 关于"遗忘"的说明可参见 林崇德:《心理学大辞典》,上海:上海教育出版社,2003年,第1536页。

<sup>3</sup> 孟子原话"人之所以异于禽兽者几希,庶民去之,君子存之",出自《孟子》,方勇译注, 北京:中华书局,2010年,第157页。

# 二、"克隆人"引发的伦理混乱

### (一) 社会关系: 混乱与困境

我们都知道,人的本质在于社会关系,作为社会里的人,做出或善或恶的伦理选择,都会影响到社会关系。假雍固执的出现给社会带来一系列不可磨灭的影响,他的所作所为如同蝴蝶效应一般,影响人际关系,甚至引发伦理混乱,导致伦理困境。假雍固执造成的伦理混乱从三个角度表现。

第一,从家人的角度看,在庆幸雍固执的性格行为在"争主"事件后有所好转的同时,也注意到了一些奇怪现象,比如妻子生育时曾梦到无数稻草人从天而降,孕育出的孩子数量过多等等。第二,从真雍固执的角度看,他被克隆人抢占了伦理身份和伦理关系。这一取代关系放在人工智能时代,就是人类被作为"工具"的克隆人驱逐。书中为了摆脱这一伦理混乱,强调了人类伦理选择的重要性,历经挫折的真雍固执最终树立了正确的价值观,回归家庭,伦理身份和社会关系再次得到确立。第三,从假雍固执角度看,他作为"克隆人",占有了自然人的母亲与妻儿,获得了新的"儿子"与"丈夫"伦理身份。这一行为直接动摇了人的本体论,导致一系列引发读者思考的伦理问题产生:真雍固执的母亲现在究竟是谁的母亲?真雍固执的妻子现在究竟是谁的妻子?假雍固执生的孩子究竟属不属于自然人?

书中并未对此类伦理混乱问题详细阐述。虽然作者为摆脱伦理困境,以 假雍固执和孩子变回稻草进行收尾,中断了进一步的伦理颠覆,但假雍固执 占妻生子的行为触犯了伦理禁忌,冲击了原有的家庭关系与伦理观念,长期 发展也许会将人类社会的伦理纲常毁于一旦。

由此可见,克隆技术是一把双刃剑。一方面,它会增强人类的幸福感。 善良孝顺的假雍固执的出现给家庭带来了融洽与和谐,也给真雍固执上了一课:作恶多端最终害人害己;另一方面,克隆技术也可能会影响伦理观念和社会关系。假雍固执的出现冲击了传统家庭伦理,生下的孩子也无法在伦理和法律上定位。许多科幻小说为了维护传统价值观念,常常以消灭克隆人来挽救崩溃的社会伦理,《雍固执传》也不例外。克隆人带来的伦理混乱至今仍是一个待解决的棘手问题,我们需要深入思考如何解决这一问题,找到出路。

## (二)命运悲歌:如何看待克隆人?

《雍固执传》虽然塑造了最初的人造人,但其结局是悲惨的。小说结尾,真雍固执拿着和尚给的符籍回到家中,把假雍固执和其所生孩子都变回了稻草人,假雍固执变回真身其实也就预示着克隆人的消失。在大多数科幻作品里,克隆人最后都面临死亡的结局。死亡是熟悉又恐怖的,它既是每个人的归宿,也是人们未曾经历、惧怕想象的。这种"恐惑"同样适用于克隆人,同是鲜活的生命体,克隆人却是被社会排斥的异类,是随时会被处置的

"他者"。最终也许只有他们死亡或消失,才能终止混乱不堪的伦理困境。

克隆人为何没有选择命运的权力呢?拉康认为,"不能以自己本身来度过自己一生的人类的悲剧是主体在构成自己原型的那个原始的地方就这样注定了"(转引自 福原泰平 46)。克隆人带着目的诞生,是一种满足人类欲望与需求的手段。而康德的伦理学认为,人是目的不是手段。因此,消灭克隆人,实际上就是否定了克隆人为"人"的意义,是自然人追求主宰权力的"反伦理行为"。人类认为自己是世界的造物者,是科学技术的操控者,是克隆人的创造者、监护人,甚至是主人。¹

郭雯副教授提出了对人与克隆人关系的新见解: "现代文明压制了个性,从而使个人淹没于群体之中,每个人都是克隆人。人类正在从精神层面进行'克隆',大家认同相似的、被标准化的思维模式、品位和行为,每个人都是彼此的镜子,也就是彼此的复影和克隆体"(郭雯 214)。从这个角度看,虽然每个人都有独特的个性,但也有在现代社会下趋同的一面。在这一面里,如果他人用"主宰"视线审视我们,我们也会产生"恐惑",反之亦然。既然我们也在经历着精神"克隆",对克隆人的命运能感同身受,那为何不能对克隆人多一些理解和包容?我们可以把克隆技术建立在敬畏生命的基础上,在造福人类的同时尊重克隆生命体的存在。正如作家麦克尤恩所倡导的,"这颗星球上生活着数十亿人类,其中的每一个个体都有着和你的内心一样鲜活、真实、不言自明的精神生活〔……〕你开始理解每一个旁人对于他们自己而言也是真实的,就如同你对于你自己而言是真实的一样。你希望别人如何待你,你就得如何待人"(31)。

#### 三、价值与启示: 古今 vs 未来

《雍固执传》通过写实的表现手法,表现了朝鲜王朝后期的社会情况: 货币经济发展,人们极力追求物质财富,丧失了道德伦理和人情阶层。<sup>2</sup> 在这样的社会环境下,小说结合了科学幻想与僧佛文化,传达出三点伦理价值。

第一,强调理性意志指导伦理选择的重要性。文学伦理学批评认为,自由意志受到理性意志的约束,人才能成为一个道德的存在。真雍固执的人生苦难都源于放纵欲望,而结局的复位也是得益于他最终懂得在理性意志的指导下摆正道德观念,重新进行正确的伦理选择。文章通过真假雍固执对比指出:"积善之家必有余庆,积恶之家必有余殃"。讽刺了利欲熏心、不忠不孝之徒,弘扬了惩恶扬善、乐行好施、孝顺父母的伦理价值。第二,关注"克隆人"命运。小说中,我们看到了一个充满人性因子的假雍固执,他聪明热情、孝顺母亲、疼爱妻儿,却因"克隆人"的先天身份,不得不接受消

<sup>1</sup> 关于人类主宰地位的论述可参见 邹少芹 胡懿真: "《别让我走》中的人与克隆人的伦理身份之解读",《名作欣赏》21(2020):16。

<sup>2 《</sup>雍固执传》关于朝鲜后期社会情况的描写可参见金宽雄李官福:《中朝古代小说比较研究(上)》,延吉:延边大学出版社,2009年,第368页。

失的命运。对假雍固执的悲剧命运思考,便是小说留给我们的余味。第三,宣扬僧佛的因果报应。从渊源上探究,《雍固执传》源于佛经故事,受到了佛经传说《吝啬的伊利沙》、《金庆争主的故事》和《真许假许事》的僧佛文化影响。「小说通过神佛推动了故事发展,无论是采用法术取得真假争主的胜利,还是借助佛教点化的方式改过自新,都宣扬了因果报应和神佛的威力。

高章源肯定了《雍固执传》这类"原型科幻"的价值: "韩国文学界历来认为国内文学很少把科学知识或相关见解融入到作品中。但是仔细观察我国固有的神话、传说、口碑文学以及以实学者为首的朝鲜后期改革性知识分子的讽刺小说,不得不让人怀疑是否真的可以如此断定。我相信,今后如果古典文学和科学从业人员对这一领域进行实证研究,完全可以找到更多有意义的资料和文献(42)"<sup>2</sup>。这类"原型科幻"对韩国后世克隆小说的发展,可以从三点进行考究。

第一,文中多角度描绘了"克隆人"的初期构想。假雍固执,即"克隆 人",复刻了人类的外貌和脑中的知识信息,可以看作是韩国最初对基因科 学产业和脑科学工程的想象叙事。同时,小说还通过梦境描写了假雍固执的 真身谜团, 体现了现实和虚拟交汇之境, 可以算作初期的虚拟现实。如今, 增强现实(AR)和虚拟现实(VR)技术已发展成熟,深入日常生活。3第 二,作为韩国"原型科幻",以"软科幻"特征观照"前科技时代"的伦理 与人文内涵。作者从古人视角对科技时代进行了前瞻性思考,预示了未来人 类社会可能出现的生存图景,也以克隆人的物化悲剧结局给人类敲响了警 钟: 科技发展不能逾越人类的伦理道德底线,误用科技也许会给人类带来毁 灭性的灾难。具有深刻的时代性意义。第三,小说将文学、伦理与科技相结 合,推动了后世科幻小说的发展。《雍固执传》之后,韩国科幻小说持续缓 慢发展。20世纪初开始译介科幻小说,著名的引进译本有儒勒•凡尔纳的长 篇小说《海底两万里》和李海朝的《铁世界》。1929年韩国诞生了首篇原创 科幻小说——金东仁的《K博士的研究》。21世纪涌现出了大批如金昌圭、裴 明勋、金宝英、朴成桓以及郑昭延等积极活跃、文采出众的科幻作家,还举 办了韩国"SF大会",成立了"SF未来研究所",创办了"韩乐源科幻小说 奖"等。⁴如今,科幻小说已成为韩国文学创作的重要形式之一,不断有新小

<sup>1</sup> 参见 李官福: 《中朝古代小说比较研究(上)》,延吉:延边大学出版社,2009年,第 371-375页。

<sup>2</sup> 笔者拙译。

<sup>3</sup> 关于《雍固执传》和虚拟现实关系的论述可参见 尹恩基: "《雍固执传》有第四次产业革命的答案", 《农民新闻》, 2020 年 1 月 15 日。2022 年 8 月 28 日。<a href="https://www.nongmin.com/opinion/OPP/SWE/FRE/318840/view">https://www.nongmin.com/opinion/OPP/SWE/FRE/318840/view</a>.

<sup>4</sup> 关于韩国科幻小说的发展可参见 高章源: 《韩国科幻小说如何存续至今: 韩国科幻小说百年史》,首尔: BOOKK,2017年,第281页。

说家加入这个大家庭,推动韩国科幻小说发展。

### 结语

本文立足于人工智能时代,以"克隆"视角观照"前科技时代"的韩 国文学。通过文学伦理学批评方法,从身份诉求、脑文本、伦理混乱和伦理 价值等四个角度分析韩国"原型科幻"《雍固执传》,解读韩国的古代人对 "克隆人"的初期构想。小说以真雍固执改邪归正的变化为伦理线,着重刻 画了"真假争主"的伦理结,展现了自然人与"克隆人"的伦理身份对立和 各自不同的伦理选择,弘扬了惩恶扬善和因果报应等伦理价值,促使人类在 思考"克隆人"悲剧命运的同时也反思自己。作为"软科幻",作品蕴含的 这些文学伦理价值与启示,为构建未来科技与人文关系预设了新的难题,也 推动了韩国后世克隆题材科幻小说的发展。

近年来,韩国文学研究界也在慢慢接受文学伦理学批评理论,并且研究 广度和深度与日俱增。从2004年聂珍钊教授明确提出该学科起,韩国已有一 些学者们参与相关的学术研讨活动。2015年10月,在韩国首尔/釜山召开了 "第五届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会",受到了学界的初步关注。2022年 4月, 聂珍钊教授的学术力作《文学伦理学批评导论》韩文版由金顺珍、尹锡 民、林大根翻译,通过韩国外国语大学知识出版院(HUINE)出版发行,成 为该学科的第一部韩文版翻译专著。由此,韩国文学研究界进一步关注文学 伦理学批评的新方法和新思路,也开展了对个别作家与作品的分析研究。同 时,韩国学界的相关研究也将在国际视野上补充文学伦理学批评整体理论建 构, 推动这新的学术生长点发展与繁荣。

#### **Works Cited**

福原泰平:《拉康——镜像阶段》,王小峰等译。石家庄:河北教育出版社,2001年。

[Fukuhara, Taihei. Lacan—The Mirror Stage, translated by Wang Xiaofeng et al. Shijiazhuang: Hebei Education Press, 2001.]

高章源: 《韩国科幻小说如何存续至今: 韩国科幻小说百年史》。首尔: BOOKK, 2017年。

[Go, Jangwon. How Korean Science Fiction Novels Has Survived until Today: A Century of Korean Science Fiction Novels. Seoul: BOOKK, 2017.]

郭雯: 《克隆人科幻小说的文学伦理学批评研究》。南京: 南京大学出版社,2019年。

[Guo Wen. A Critical Study of Ethical Literary Criticism on Science Fiction Novels of Clones. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2019.]

《裴裨将传.雍固执传》,金三不校注。首尔:国际文化馆版,1950年。

[Baebijangieon, Onggojipieon, Notes to Kim, Sambul, Seoul: International Cultural Center edition, 1950.]

伊恩·麦克尤恩: "如果有一天, '人造人'写出了小说", 阅读 24 (2019): 29-31。

- [Ian, McEwan. "If one day, artificial people write novels." Reading 24 (2019): 29-31.]
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "脑文本和脑概念的形成机制与文学伦理学批评",《外国文学研究》5(2017): 26-34。
- [—. "The Forming Mechanism of Brain Text and Brain Concept in Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism." Foreign Literature Studies 5 (2017): 26-34.]
- 聂珍钊、苏晖总主编: 《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao and Su Hui, eds. A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]
- 尚必武: "科学选择与伦理选择的冲突: 麦克尤恩《像我这样的机器》中的人工智能与脑文本", 《外国文学研究》5(2019): 61-74。
- [Shang Biwu. "The Conflict between Scientific Selection and Ethical Selection: Artificial Intelligence and Brain Text in Ian Mc Ewan's *Machines Like Me.*" Foreign Literature Studies 5 (2019): 61-74.]
- 王素英: 《凯瑟琳・曼斯菲尔德小说的审美现代性》。北京: 中国社会科学出版社, 2015年。
- [Wang Suying. Aesthetic Modernity of Katherine Mansfield's Novels. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 2015.]

# 安吉拉·卡特《马戏团之夜》中的赛博女性主义伦理 Ethics of Cyberfeminism in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus

孙艳萍(Sun Yanping) 黄梦琴(Huang Mengqin)

内容摘要:小说《马戏团之夜》是卡特进行女性怪物书写和女性主义伦理构建的经典之作,其中以主人公费芙斯为代表的女性人物具有怪兽斯芬克斯的形态特征。她们远离以血缘关系为基础的伦理环境,既是异化客体又是超人类主体,表现出伦理身份的矛盾与混乱。本文依托哈拉维的赛博格思想,结合文学伦理学批评理论,深入探讨妓院、女怪物博物馆、皇家马戏团和伯爵夫人科学院四个"异托邦"内女性奇人怪物的伦理困境和伦理成长,指出这些消极物种经由身体觉醒和身体交流逐渐成长为颠覆性的赛博格。她们超越物种、性别、种族等人类社会的二元界限,完成了走向生命融合的伦理身份嬗变,是科技时代革命性的强大生命体,也是作家对当代人类文明建构的伦理身份想象。

**关键词:**安吉拉·卡特;《马戏团之夜》;赛博格;女性主义;生命伦理 作者简介:孙艳萍,浙江大学外国语学院副教授,主要研究方向为英美文学; 黄梦琴,浙江大学外国语学院博士研究生,主要研究方向为英美文学。

Title: Ethics of Cyberfeminism in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus

Abstract: Nights at the Circus is Carter's classic work on female monster writing and ethical construction of feminism. The female characters represented by the protagonist Fevvers have the morphological characteristics of Sphinx. Distant from the ethical environment based on blood relationship, they are both alienated objects and superhuman subjects, showing the contradiction and confusion of ethical identity. Combined with literary ethics criticism theory, Haraway's cyborg thought strongly supports the study of ethical dilemma and ethical growth of female monsters in "heterotopia", which refers to Brothel, Women Monster Museum, Imperial Circus and Countess's Seminary in this novel. Gradually, these passive species grow into subversive cyborgs, transcending the binary boundaries of human society, such as species, gender and race, and completing ethical-identity evolution towards life unity. As powerful life forms in sci-tech age, such female cyborgs symbolize Carter's ethical identity imagination for the construction of contemporary

human civilization.

Keywords: Angela Carter; Nights at the Circus; cyborg; feminism; bioethics

**Authors:** Sun Yanping is Associate Professor at School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her academic research focuses on British and American Literature (Email: pearlsyp@163.com). **Huang Mengqin** is Ph.D. Candidate at the School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her academic research focuses on British and American Literature (Email: 12105024@zju.edu.cn).

英国当代女作家安吉拉·卡特(Angela Carter, 1940-1992)在其巅峰之作<sup>1</sup>《马戏团之夜》(Nights at the Circus, 1984)中塑造了大量颠覆性的女性怪物形象。国内外学者对其开展了普遍而又复杂的女性主义研究,涉及身体(Woo, 2015)、性别气质(Douglas, 2014)、双性同体(Alban, 2010)、女同性恋(Gamble, 2014)、女性空间(程汇娟,2014)<sup>2</sup>等众多重要的概念和理论,突出表现了卡特对两性关系、女性身份建构、权利运作等政治哲学问题的深度问思。值得一提的是,学界虽对其中的怪物现象作了诸如女性怪物力量(Martin, 1999)、超现实变形(Yang, 2016)、铁娘子(Iron Lady)景观(Oliver, 2010)<sup>3</sup>此类的具化研究,但并未注意到卡特这一幻想巨作与几乎同

<sup>1</sup> See Sage Lorna, *Moments of Truth: Twelve Twentieth Century Women Writers*. London: Fourth Estate, 2001: 221; Helen Stoddart, *Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus*. London and New York: Routledge, 2007: 6; Sarah Waters, "Introduction." *Nights at the Circus*, edited by Angela Carter. London: Vintage, 2006. vii.

<sup>2</sup> See Jung Woo, "Angela Carter's Moral Romance Novel Nights at the Circus: Female Monsters' Body and Love Story." Studies in Modern Fiction 22 (2015): 141-172; Erin Douglas, "Freak Show Femininities: Intersectional Spectacles in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Women's Studies 43 (2014): 1-24; Gillian Alban. "Gender-Bending Fantasies in Women's Writing: Fantastic in Angela Carter's The Infernal Desire Machines of Dr. Hoffman, Nights at the Circus, and Jeanette Winterson's The Passion." Mine Ozyurt Kilic 04 (2010): 257-259; Jennifer Gustar, "Remembering Cassandra, or Oedipus Gets Hysterical: Contestatory Madness and Illuminating Magic in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Tulsa Studies in Women's Literature 23 (2004): 339-369; Sarah Gamble, "Gender Vertigo: Queer Gothic and Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Reassessing the Twentieth-Century Canon 2014: 221-234; 程汇娟: "异托邦、区域空间和魔幻现实主义——论《马戏团之夜》的空间叙事",《外文研究》2 (2014): 52-56+72+106。

<sup>3</sup> See Sara Martin, "The Power of Monstrous Women: Fay Weldon's *The Life and Loves of a She-Devil* (1983), Angela Carter's *Nights at the Circus* (1984) and Jeanette Winterson's *Sexing the Cherry* (1989)." *Journal of Gender Studies* 08 (1999): 93-210; Karen Yang, "Angels and Feathers: Transcorporeal Morphing in Angela Carter's *Nights at the Circus.*" *Critique: Studies in Contemporary Fiction* 57 (2016): 502-511; Matthew Oliver, "Iron(ic) Ladies: Thatcher, the Wanderer, and the Post-imperial Grotesque in Angela Carter's *Nights at the Circus.*" *Contemporary Women Writing* 4 (2010): 237-253.

时期发表的《赛博格宣言》("A Cyborg Manifest", 1985)一文之间的密切联系。实际上,小说中以主人公费芙斯为代表的女性人物具备成长为赛博格的身体僭越潜能。更为重要的是,她们与希腊神话怪兽斯芬克斯(Sphinx)一样面临着"做人还是做兽"的选择问题,也承载着卡特对当今科技时代人类本质和生命价值的伦理思考。本文将从"'科技怪物'赛博格","女性怪物的伦理困境"和"走向赛博格的伦理身份嬗变"三个层面深入探讨这部小说中的赛博女性主义伦理。其中,赛博格的形象和内涵不同于西方文学经典对怪物的负面书写,它跨越人与动物、生命体与机械体、物质与非物质等一系列界限,是女性主义突破西方科学与政治传统的可能性所在。同时,作为一种后现代社会的多元意象和多物种"共生"(symbiose)的切入点,"科技怪物"赛博格为小说中身处伦理困境的斯芬克斯女性怪物提供了伦理身份嬗变的方向。

## 一、"科技怪物"赛博格

在西方古老的神话传说和经典的小说作品中,怪物经常与邪恶、暴力、血腥等负面意象相关。其中,斯芬克斯是最著名的也是最具象征性的残忍怪兽,"她长着女人的头、狮子的身体、鹰的翅膀和蛇一样的尾巴"(聂珍钊37),"蹲守在前往忒拜的十字路口,要求过往的行人回答一个谜语,凡是破解不了她的谜语的人都会被杀死"(Ibid. 36)。古英语文学最重要的作品、中世纪欧洲第一部民族史诗《贝奥武甫》(Beowulf)记载了贝奥武甫在迈向武士与国王宝座过程中与水怪、水怪母、金水龙三大怪物的对抗。这三大怪物在此被描述为正义英雄的对立面,也即扰乱人类幸福与平静生活的邪恶妖魔。世界上第一部科幻小说《弗兰肯斯坦》(Frankenstein, 1818)描述了无名氏科学怪物的现代普罗米修斯悲剧,它承载了人类对科学未知的恐惧和焦虑。总之,西方经典文学文本中的怪物形象经常被理解为作恶的异化物种,人类社会的种种罪恶都象征性地集中在它们身上。

赛博格可以说是科技时代的怪物,它是在人类需求、技术发展和科幻想象的过程中不断进化并生成的。美国的两位科学家曼弗雷德·克莱恩斯(Manfred Clynes)和纳森·克莱因(Nathan Kline)在《赛博格与太空》("Cyborgs and Space", 1960)一文中首次提出赛博格的概念。其中,赛博格是通过改造人体功能以适应太空环境的自我管理系统。换句话说,它是一种超越人类功能的价值体现。此外,赛博格是苏美冷战和武器竞争的产物,是发达国家科技力量的代名词,"现代战争就是赛博格的狂欢"(Haraway, When Species Meet 150)。20世纪美国后现代女性主义研究者堂娜·哈拉维(Donna Haraway)在《赛博格宣言》(A Cyborg Manifesto, 1991)中将赛博格重新阐释为"一种控制有机体,一种机器和生物体的混合,一种社会现实的创造物,同时也是一种虚构的创造物"(314)。赛博格作为一种新的主

体,也是符合后现代社会多元性的一个主体概念,正如哈拉维所说, "赛博格一种拆分又重组的存在,是一种后现代的聚合性而又个人化的自我,是女权主义者现在必须学会破译的自我"(Ibid. 365)。概括来说,哈拉维将赛博格隐喻为"一个忠于女性主义、社会主义、唯物主义的反讽式的政治神话"(Ibid.),指出女性和赛博格一样具有颠覆性的社会变革潜力。

卡特曾在其讨论女性身体困境的理论文本《萨德式女人》(The Sadeian Woman, 1979) 中提到, "一个身处不自由社会的女人会是一个怪物" (27)。此外,她醉心于西方神话/童话故事和经典小说文本中的怪物情 节,尤其着迷于中世纪的女兽角色,并在文学作品中戏仿性地描摹了诸多复 杂的女性怪物形象。同样热衷于修正西方童话传统的魔幻现实主义大师萨 尔曼·拉什迪(Salman Rushdie)曾颂扬卡特为"仁慈而慷慨的巫婆皇后" (5)。卡特的早期短篇小说《紫姬的爱情》("The Love of Lady Purple", 1974) 塑造了混杂怪兽、巫女、僵尸、吸血鬼等概念的"睡美人"人物形 象:代表作《新夏娃激情》(The Passion of New Eve, 1977)讲述了主人公 伊夫林经由变性手术变身科技版夏娃的过程;现实剧《老虎新娘》("The Tiger Bride", 1979) 反转性地刻画了同是维纳斯和美杜莎的野兽美女。《马 戏团之夜》可谓是卡特进行女性奇人怪物书写的经典巨作,其中"鸟女" 费芙斯、四眼芬妮、沉睡在梦境中的"睡美人"、身高不满三英寸的侏儒 "奇观"、"蛛丝"女孩、"二合一"两性人艾伯特、"乡下人"欧嘉•亚 历珊卓芙娜是"科技怪物"赛博格的前身。正如哈拉维提出用"怪物纪" (Chthulucene) 对抗"人类纪(Anthropocene) 和资本纪(Capitalocene) 时 代的诸多丑闻"(A Cyborg Manifesto 2)一样,卡特企图用"怪物秀"对抗 人类社会任何建立在等级系统或二元对立基础上的分类,为女性他者与边缘 化群体和个体找寻合理的存在方式与人生价值。

#### 二、女性怪物的伦理困境

在西方传统哲学中,女性被界定为物质性和非理性的无灵魂存在,对女性的歧视很大程度上建立在男女身体的差异上。古希腊著名思想家亚里士多德(Aristotle)曾说,"女性之所以为女性,是因为她缺少某种特质,我们应当看到,女性的本性先天就有缺陷,因而在折磨着她"(转引自 波伏娃 10),这里的"本性"实际上指的就是女性的身体本质。中世纪经院哲学家托马斯•阿奎纳(Thomas Aquinas)认为,"女人是一个身体构造不完整的男人"(转引自 张剑 123)。总之,女性身体长期被视为"黑暗的大陆"(Freud 114)和无生命的容器,是邪恶、死亡、不洁的象征。作为生命的载体,身体的物质性上叠加着伦理维度,《马戏团之夜》中以费芙斯为代表的女性人物的斯芬克斯怪物体征决定了她们矛盾、混乱的伦理身份。伦理困境"指文学文本中由于伦理混乱而给人物带来的难以解决的矛盾与冲突"(聂

珍钊 258)。换句话说,女性怪物的身体构造和基因组成是她们陷入伦理困境的根源。首先,畸形的身体和变异的基因导致她们成为人类社会的边缘化他者,沦为色情娱乐、资本消费和权利规训的异化客体。"鸟女"费芙斯一出生便被遗弃在纳尔逊嬷嬷的妓院里,正如她在故事开头的自述,"亲爱的莉琪,在送客出门时被我这个喵呜喵呜叫的小不点儿绊了一脚,是她把我带进屋里,而我就在那儿被这群好心的女人抚养大"(26)¹。接着,费芙斯和像她那般的自然界奇人怪物"睡美人"、芬妮、"奇观"、"蛛丝"女孩、艾伯特、醉厨娘等被相继卖到女怪物博物馆里为史瑞克夫人廉价工作。颅相学家鉴定为"低等狡黠的乡下人"的欧嘉被转运到伯爵夫人为研究女罪犯而设立的科学机构。

妓院和博物馆女怪们是被凝视和色情化的对象,正如美国著名批评家莱 斯利·费德勒(Leslie Fiedler)所言, "所有的怪物都会在某种程度上被视 作是色情的"(137)。费芙斯童年时期和少女时代在妓院里首先"学习如何 被观看——学习当一个观赏者眼中的物件"(39),然后扮演"丘比特"和 "胜利的女神"此类活生生的雕像,长大之后在女怪物博物馆里饰演男性顾 客臆想的"死亡天使";成熟之后在皇家马戏团里表演充满娱乐性质的空中 飞人(aerialiste)。"睡美人"、"奇观"、"蛛丝"女孩等摆出各自独特 的姿势,以最大限度地刺激男性的视觉感受,激发他们的性欲望。其中,最 为经典的场景是睡美人"一丝不挂、光溜溜地躺在大理石板上"(103),仿 佛是座死刑场;费芙斯张开双臂,守护在她身旁。这一"活人画"的展出同 时表明这些女性也是被消费和物化的商品,她们的存在只是男人眼中的一个 物件罢了。让·鲍德里亚(Jean Baudrillard)在《消费社会》(The Consumer Society, 1970)中提到, "在消费的全套装备中,身体是比其他一切都美丽、 更珍贵、更光彩夺目的物品"(120)。"永远与人格格不入、非我族类" (248)的女性怪物的身体则更加具有吸引力和消费市场。费芙斯能被柯尼 尔上校吸纳入皇家马戏团并运送到全球各地频繁演出,"全是看在钞票的份 上"(151)。毕竟费芙斯这个不可思议的奇迹和驯养老虎的"阿比西尼亚公 主"、"丑王"巴佛、"受教育过的猿猴"、迈起步来撼天动地的大象一样 寓意着"波涛汹涌的简报、合约、纸票"(Ibid.)。女囚犯欧嘉是行为控制 实施的对象,即英国实用主义哲学家杰里米·边沁(Jeremy Bentham)所描 述的"圆形监狱"(Panopticon) 里的狱卒。伯爵夫人坐在可以随意控制转速 的旋转椅上凝视、再凝视、持续凝视,而欧嘉在自己的牢房里,"每时每刻 都被一双无处不在的眼睛监视着,以至于在心中形成了一种永恒的'全景敞 视'的意识形态"(福柯,《规训与惩罚》224-228)。她"一次比一次更吃 惊地在寒冷的牢房里醒来,发现伯爵夫人的目光在她的身上耙扫着,仿佛正

<sup>1</sup> 本文有关《马戏团之夜》的引文均来自安吉拉·卡特,《马戏团之夜》,杨雅婷译(南京:南京大学出版社,2011年)。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

在这项罪行的灰烬中彻底翻捡"(325)。此时的欧嘉不再是自由的生命个体,而是暗淡、苍白的权利他者。

然而,异于常人的身体表现和基因组成建构了她们作为特技表演和科学研究的超人类主体身份,为她们赢得了更多的生存可能和发展机会。费芙斯出生之后便被妓院里好心的"母亲们"免费抚养长大,她们从来没对她说过一句脏话,也没有对她做过任何冷酷刻薄的举动。在这漫长的七年里,她什么也不用做,"只充当一个被涂了颜色、贴上金箔的爱的标志"(30)。在女怪物博物馆里,她和以"睡美人"为代表的女怪们通过独特的身体表演自力更生。在柯尼尔上校的马戏团,她负责高超的杂技表演,成为最负盛名的空中飞人,也赢得了科学界如"皇家外科学院"许多男士的友谊。"在欧洲巡回演出期间,成群的巴黎人愿意为她赴汤蹈火(······)全伦敦都拜倒在她飞跃的足下"(10-11)。在签下一份六位数的"豪华帝国巡回演出"合约之后,她又从横滨航行到西雅图,开始在美国展开"豪华民主巡回演出"。同样,伯爵夫人科学院里的欧嘉"不用辛苦劳动,也不会再受鞭笞"(322),更不用为自己的杀夫罪行承担相应的法律责任,她的生活是平静而安定的。

人类的"伦理意识最初表现为对建立在血缘和亲属关系上的伦理身份的确认,进而建立伦理秩序"(聂珍钊257)。然而,生活在妓院、女怪物博物馆、马戏团和伯爵夫人科学院这四个非血缘关系组成的"异托邦"里的女怪们远离了传统的家庭伦理环境,背弃了为人妻为人母的伦理身份。表面上她们依靠身体和基因的特异性自立自强;实际上她们的内心是极其矛盾的。费芙斯不是备受瞻仰的天使女神,而是一个不可思议的怪胎,是"一个被剥夺人类特权的警世存在,无法拥有血肉之躯"(248)。其他博物馆女怪们也深知自己是被严重贬低和丑化的,她们不是为了赚钱而卖身的劳动妇女,"而是受诅咒的灵魂,只是为了引诱男人走向灭亡而卖身"(61);欧嘉并不享受伯爵夫人科学院里的仁慈待遇;相反,"在她充裕的空间里,有时候,这感觉像是人死后的空闲,因为在这个地方,她觉得自己就跟死了差不多"(327)。她们虽然颠覆了传统的家庭道德和两性伦理关系,却无法真正摆脱权利操纵和身体消费的牢笼。面对此番挑战,卡特赋予她们赛博格的伦理身份想象以助其实现人生的蜕变和困境的突围。

# 三、走向赛博格的伦理身份嬗变

女性怪物身体本身所具有的两面性给她们带来生存困境的同时也带来人生转机。正如福柯所说,"身体是构建人类主体意识的一个主要权利点,它既是权利的结果,又是权利关系得以形成和反抗的一个关键载体"(《性经验史》116)。正是在身体的这种特性之上,卡特书写了女性怪物的伦理身份改变和伦理成长。欧嘉决定"该是让自己自在过活的时候了"(328),她开始真诚地面对自己的身体,关注自身的身体经验。月经来潮时,她用手蘸

着经血,在收到的字条背面书写回复内容。"用来自她子宫的血,在牢房秘处,她画了一颗心"(329)。欧嘉就是这样用血(包括经血和从静脉流出的血)和排泄物等身体物质书写字条和描摹图画以传达讯息,"因为,尽管她的身体长久以来一直受到否认,但任何一种体液对她们来说都不陌生,尤其是在她们极端艰困的处境中"(330)。此外,通过肢体抚摸、眼神对望及其他身体交流方式,欧嘉和其他女囚犯一起积极对抗伯爵夫人。最终,她们一起走出牢笼,彼此亲吻,互相拥抱,"四周的雪白世界看起来好像是刚刚创造出来的一般,那是张崭新而空白的纸,她们可以在上面题写任何她们想要的未来"(333),这无疑预示着新的生命和希望。欧嘉将身体经验运用为"力量、生命、文化的工具和获得控制权和自我解放的武器"(qtd. in King 30),这种身体觉醒正如哈拉维在宣言里的结语:"宁愿做一个赛博格,而不愿做一个女神"(A Cyborg Manifesto 232)。女性的身体不再是单一的性别身体,而是不产生任何对立二元性的赛博格身体。女性的价值超越了大地母神般的家庭伦理身份,驳斥了以科学研究为借口的社会意识形态。

欧嘉的身体革命实际上是同一物种之间的身体交流,而不同物种之间的 身体交流使得女性怪物更加彻底地走向了赛博格的伦理身份嬗变。"蛛丝" 女孩发现自身独特的视觉,并开始用手描绘自己所看到的景象,最终成为以 光影强化 1 技法著称的名画家。跳蛛(蜘蛛的一种)具备强大的视觉系统,能 很好利用光线中的绿光,形成独特的图像散焦机制。很显然,"蛛丝"女孩 的蜕变源于她作为人类与蜘蛛作为动物之间的身体沟通与生命融合,这种结 合为她抹去了受害者身份,构建了新的后现代赛博格身份。同样,费芙斯通 过与鸟类身体的交流完成了不同物种之间的完美僭越,生成了理解生命本源 的创造性力量,成长为鸟类特质与人类智慧的结合体——赛博格。辗转伦敦、 圣彼得堡和西伯利亚,费芙斯拒绝对周遭的事物感到畏惧。相反,她不断思 考, "我真的存在吗?还是被虚构出来的"(488),不断追问"汝自何来? 汝欲何往?"(436),反复确认自己不是任何人的女儿,而是"无需隐瞒缺 点、如实呈现的女性典范;不再是想象出来的虚构之物,而是清楚明显的事 实"(482)。逐渐地,她看清了资本主义消费观、权力机制等对她的谎言性 身份定位,她其实不是伦敦维纳斯、空中飞人海伦、启示天使,也不是倒霉 的可怜怪胎,而是赛博格新女性。她的存在和特质是独一无二的、不可分割 的。她的目的地是"飞向画面之外,飞向不可知的太虚"(151)。小说以费 芙斯的大笑结尾,她的"笑声所形成的龙卷风盘旋前进,横扫整个星球,仿 佛那是一种不由自主、自然而发的反应,回应着在它底下无限铺陈的巨大喜 剧,直到世界各处所有活着、会呼吸的东西都笑了起来"(447)。朱迪思•巴 特勒 (Judith Butler) 在《性别麻烦》 (Gender Trouble, 1990) 中指出, "笑

<sup>1</sup> 光影强化(Chiaroscuro),又称"明暗对照法"或"涂晕法"。这是一种始于文艺复兴时期的绘画技巧,以强烈光源射向主题,强化画面光影,再以极度之暗调子作为背景。

声具有颠覆性的潜力,有可能破坏规范性的、由社会产生的身份类别,并进而破坏权威主义的文化"(138-139)。费芙斯的笑声便是这样,它挑战包括自我/他者、思想/肉体、文化/自然在内的二元对立结构,消弭身体之间、生命之间、主客体之间的界限,表现出强大的生命融合力量。这种力量否定人类社会对生命体的任何狭隘的伦理界定,强调动态的、关系性的赛博格伦理身份。

"文学是特定历史阶段人类社会的伦理表达形式,文学在本质上是关于 伦理的艺术"(聂珍钊13)。《马戏团之夜》承载着寨博格生命伦理,是卡 特对科技时代人类文明建构的伦理身份想象。赛博格生命(拓展至动物、非 人类生命)不再是某个物种的独有权利,而是向着"以生命本身为中心的平 等主义"(Zoe-centered Egalitarianism)(Braidotti 60)发展,最终成为一 个相互作用、相互开放的过程。赛博格生命体是一种处于关系中的、本质未 明的动态存在, "是永远不可判定的范畴, 一个成问题的范畴(……)一种 内在的实体/内在古怪物(intra-ontics/intra-antics),是人工制品、机器、风 景、有机体或者是人"(Haraway, Staving with the Trouble 165)。正如哈拉 维所说: "赛博格既是实体又是隐喻,是有生命的存在又是叙事建构"(A Cyborg Manifesto 150)。卡特在小说中对女性怪物生成赛博格的叙事建构既 关乎女性怪物在人类社会的生存现实和伦理困境,又积极暗示了她们身上所 蕴含的身体僭越潜能和生命融合力量。这种策略性的革命成长要求人类对自 我进行重新定位,对文化假设进行重新评估,对生命进行重新感知。换句话 说,卡特笔下的赛博格女性将不再"默默无闻,被人遗忘,从历史中抹去, 仿佛从未存在过"(520);相反,她们正以多元开放的视阈展现生命交互相 融的后人类生命伦理观。

溯源西方经典文学作品中的怪物形象,我们可以看到怪物作为邪恶的化身,背负着人类社会的种种罪恶。《马戏团之夜》中以主人公费芙斯为代表的女性人物具有怪兽斯芬克斯的形态特征,她们远离以血缘关系为基础的伦理环境,表现出既是异化客体又是超人类主体的矛盾伦理身份,陷入了"做人还是做兽"的伦理两难。"科技怪物"赛博格是一种强大的越界生命体,它颠覆和解构生命体/机器、文化/天性、思想/肉体、自我/他者、主体/客体等二元对立,能为女性奇人怪物逃逸伦理困境提供路径。同时,它是一个符合后现代社会多元性的主体概念,象征多元化的女性身份,能为女性他者进行伦理身份嬗变创造可能。综上所述,卡特在小说中通过对女性怪物的颠覆性书写及其伦理成长的叙事建构,展开了对女性进化和未来世界异化残骸的伦理身份想象,强调了以身体交流和生命融合为中心的后人类生命伦理,也即卡特所要构建的女性主义伦理。

#### Works Cited

Alban, Gillian. "Gender-Bending Fantasies in Women's Writing: Fantastic in Angela Carter's The Infernal Desire Machines of Dr. Hoffman, Nights at the Circus, and Jeanette Winterson's The Passion." Mine Ozyurt Kilic 4 (2010): 257-259.

让 • 鲍德里亚: 《消费社会》, 刘成富 全志钢译。南京: 南京大学出版社, 2014年。

[Baudrillard, Jean. The Consumer Society, translated by Liu Chengfu and Quan Zhigang. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2014.]

西蒙娜·德·波伏娃:《第二性》,陶铁柱译。北京:中国书籍出版社,1998年。

[Beauvoir, Simone de. The Second Sex, translated by Tao Tiezhu. Beijing: China Book Press, 1998.]

Braidotti, Rosi. The Posthuman. Cambridge (UK): Polity Press, 2013.

朱迪斯•巴特勒:《性别麻烦:女性主义与身份的颠覆》,宋素凤译。上海:三联书店,2009年。

[Butler, Judith. Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity, translated by Song Sufeng. Shanghai: Sanlian Bookstore, 2009.]

安吉拉·卡特:《马戏团之夜》,杨雅婷译。南京:南京大学出版社,2011年。

[Carter, Angela. Nights at the Circus, translated by Yang Yating. Nanjing: Nanjing UP, 2011.]

Carter, Angela. The Sadeian Woman: An Exercise in Cultural History. New York: Penguin Group, 1979.

程汇娟: "异托邦、区域空间和魔幻现实主义:论《马戏团之夜》的空间叙事",《外文研究》 4 (2014) : 52-73.

[Cheng Huijuan. "Heterotopias, Regional Spaces and Magical Realism: Spatial Narrative in Nights at the Circus." Foreign Studies 4 (2014): 52-73.]

Clynes, Manfred and Nathan Kline. "Cyborgs and Space." Astronautics 9 (1960): 27.

Douglas, Erin. "Freak Show Femininities: Intersectional Spectacles in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Women's Studies 43 (2014): 1-24.

Fiedler, Leslie. Freaks: Myth and Images of the Secret Self. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1978.

米歇尔·福柯: 《规训与惩罚》,杨远樱译。北京: 三联书店,1999年。

[Foucault, Michel. Discipline and Punish, translated by Yang Yuanying. Beijing: Sanlian Bookstore, 1999.]

一一: 《性经验史》, 佘碧平译。上海: 上海人民出版社, 2000年。

[—. History of Sexuality, translated by She Biping. Shanghai: Shanghai People's Press, 2000.]

Freud, Sigmund. "Femininity." The Standard Edition of the Complete Psychological Works of Sigmund Freud. vol. xxii, translated by James Strachey. London: The Hogarth Press, 1964. 112-135.

Gamble, Sarah. "Gender Vertigo: Queer Gothic and Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Reassessing the Twentieth-Century Canon, edited by Nicola Allen and David Simmons. London: Palgrave Macmillan, 2014. 221-234.

Gustar, Jennifer. "Remembering Cassandra, or Oedipus Gets Hysterical: Contestatory Madness and Illuminating Magic in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Tulsa Studies in Women's Literature 23 (2004): 339-369.

- Haraway, Donna. A Cyborg Manifesto: Science, Technology, and Socialist Feminism in the Late Twentieth Century. London: Free Association, 1991.
- —. Staying with the Trouble: Making Kin in the Chthulucene. Durham: Duke UP, 2016.
- —. When Species Meet. Minneapolis: U of Minnesota P, 2008.
- King, Jeannette. Women and the Word: Contemporary Women Novelists and the Bible. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2000.
- Lorna, Sage. Moments of Truth: Twelve Twentieth Century Women Writers. London: Fourth Estate, 2001.
- Martin, Sara. "The Power of Monstrous Women: Fay Weldon's *The Life and Loves of a She-Devil* (1983),

  Angela Carter's *Nights at the Circus* (1984) and Jeanette Winterson's *Sexing the Cherry* (1989)." *Journal of Gender Studies* 8 (1999): 93-210.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Literary Ethics Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- Oliver, Matthew. "Iron(ic) Ladies: Thatcher, the Wanderer, and the Post-imperial Grotesque in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Contemporary Women Writing 4 (2010): 237-253.
- Rushdie, Salman. "Obituary: Angela Carter, 1940-1942: A Very Good Wizard, a Very Dear Friend." New York Times Book Review 8 (1992): 5.
- Stoddart, Helen. Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus. London and New York: Routledge, 2007.
- Waters, Sarah. "Introduction." *Nights at the Circus*, edited by Angela Carter. London: Vintage, 2006. v-xi.
- Woo, Jung. "Angela Carter's Moral Romance Novel *Nights at the Circus*: Female Monsters' Body and Love Story." *Studies in Modern Fiction* 22 (2015): 141-172.
- Yang, Karen. "Angels and Feathers: Transcorporeal Morphing in Angela Carter's Nights at the Circus." Critique: Studies in Contemporary Fiction 57 (2016): 502-511.
- 张剑: "西方文论关键词: 他者", 《外国文学》1(2011): 118-127+159-160。
- [Zhang Jian. "Western Literary Theory Keyword: The Other." Foreign Literature 1 (2011): 118-127+159-160.]

# 《第四间冰期》中的现代性观照与科技伦理反思 Reflections on Modernity and Ethics of Science and Technology in *Inter Ice Age 4*

许静华(Xu Jinghua)

内容摘要:安部公房的《第四间冰期》以人类生存危机的预言为背景,构建了一个"现在"与"未来"对峙的权力构图,揭示了科技与权力合谋,践踏个人利益乃至生命的暴力性。一方面,作品对"预言机"等科技产物与政治间共谋关系的刻画,蕴含了安部对20世纪50年代美苏争霸格局下日本的政治窘境的讽喻;另一方面,在现代性价值观的宰治下,"预言机"成了凌驾于人的价值理性之上的"物神",而"水栖人"改造则对伦理尺度提出了严峻挑战,主人公面临的科技伦理与人的生存发展权、保守与进步、科技理性与价值理性的冲突,映射出了作者对现代性内生悖论的伦理反思。

关键词:安部公房:《第四间冰期》:现代性:科技伦理

作者简介: 许静华, 广东外语外贸大学南国商学院副教授, 主要研究方向为 日本文学。

**Title:** Reflections on Modernity and Ethics of Science and Technology in *Inter Ice Age 4* 

Abstract: Based on the prediction of human survival crisis, Kobo Abe's science fiction *Inter Ice Age* 4 constructs a power composition of confrontation between "present" and "future", revealing the violence of collusion between technology and power, trampling on personal interests and life. On the one hand, the depiction of the collusion between science and technology products and politics contains the allegory of the political dilemma of Japan under the pattern of American Soviet hegemony in 1950s; on the other hand, under the control of modern values, "prediction machine" has become a "Fetish" over human value rationality, while the "aquatic human" transformation poses a serious challenge to the ethical scale. The hero is confronted with the conflict between the ethics of science and technology and the rights of survival and development, conservation and progress, scientific and technological rationality and value rationality, that the author's reflection on the paradox of modernity is mapped out.

**Keywords:** Kobo Abe; *Inter Ice Age 4*; modernity; ethics of science and technology

**Author: Xu Jinghua** is Associate Professor at the School of Asian Languages and Cultures, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies South China Business College (Guangzhou 510545, China). Her academic research focuses on Japanese literature (Email: 5384436@qq.com).

受爱伦•坡(Edgar Allen Poe, 1809-1849)、罗伯特•谢克里(Robert Sheckley, 1928-2005)等科幻小说家的影响,安部公房(Kobo Abe, 1924-1993)重视科幻小说(Science Fiction,简称SF)这一创作手法的现实批判功能,认为SF的真髓在于通过"假说的设定"(或曰"怪物性")给"日常性"带来冲击¹,倡导以探索未知的"SF精神"来叩问自然主义文学所难以企及的课题。在面对复杂的国内外政治形势和现代性的冲击之际,SF无疑是安部公房用于颠覆"日常性"、审视当下的重要武器。

安部公房先后创作了《R62 号的发明》(『R62 号の発明』, 1953)、《饥 饿同盟》(『飢餓同盟』,1954)、《盲肠》(『盲腸』,1955)、《钥匙》 (『鍵』,1956)、《铅蛋》(『鉛の卵』,1957)、《第四间冰期》(『第 四間氷期』,1959)、《和人一模一样》(『人間そっくり』,1966)等科 幻小说,被誉为日本科幻小说的先驱。其中,《第四间冰期》尤具开创性意 义,获得了日本"第一部优秀的长篇科幻小说"的盛誉。然而,基于对不同 体裁的文学性评价及主导权问题,当时的日本文坛普遍认为纯文学的价值高 于科幻题材小说, 学界对安部公房的 SF 作品并未予以充分的瞩目<sup>2</sup>。在围绕《第 四间冰期》为数不多的先行研究中, 鸟羽耕史分析了支撑"水栖人"和"预 言机"构想的科学理论分别来源于苏联的生物学和美国的神经机械学,认为《第 四间冰期》影射了1950年代处于美苏两大政治力量夹缝中的日本共产党"脱 离现实的政策,在本质上并不信任大众"(113)的革命现状。杣谷英纪认为《第 四间冰期》等 SF 作品旨在利用"偏见/怪物"的"假说"来影射政治,"'断 裂的未来'之恐怖可视为当下政治恐怖本质的投影"(146)。两位研究者无 疑都留意到了该作品对当下日本社会现实的批判维度,却忽视了作品关于"人 类未来的生存危机"的预设中所包含的对人类共同体普遍的价值关怀这一面 相。

《第四间冰期》通过科幻小说这一载体,讽喻性地指涉了同时代的历史 性事件,在揭示当下社会存在的种种弊病的同时,又从普遍性的层面探讨科 技的异化及现代性价值观内生的悖论,解构现代性价值观的自明性,探索克

<sup>1</sup> 参见 安部公房: 「SF、この名づけがたきもの」, 『安部公房全集』第 20 巻, 東京: 新潮社, 1999 年, 第 52-54 页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 加藤優:「ジャンル化への違和:安部公房と『SF マガジン』」,『早稲田大学大学院教育学研究科紀要』別冊 27 号 2(2020): 15-27。

服现代性消极面的可能性。作品对"预言机""水栖人"等科技产物与政治间共谋关系的刻画与揭示,蕴含了安部对美苏争霸格局下日本的政治窘境的讽喻;主人公所面临的科技伦理与人的生存发展权、保守与进步、科技理性与价值理性的冲突,映射出了作者对现代性内生的悖论的省思。进而,从作品与"反乌托邦"著作《美丽新世界》的比较解读中,可以窥见安部对"现代性之功过"不拘于成见的开放性态度以及倡导以人的主观能动性和伦理反思来遏制现代性消极面的主张。

## 一、科技与权力的共谋:现实观照与政治讽喻

正如李先胤所指出的,"安部文学中的'怪物性'体现在用超越现实主义式的表现手法描绘出异样的现实世界,却与同时代的历史事件有着密切的关联。其作品巧妙地折射出了大东亚战争、冷战期的国家竞争、科技、劳动条件、国家意识形态等 20 世纪诸暴力性问题的结构"(62)。安部公房借科幻小说这一"假说文学"形式,对现实中的事件展开隐喻、戏仿式刻画,意在对现实社会中的各种"痼疾"进行揭露与讽刺。

《第四间冰期》创作的现实背景是 1957 年苏联成功发射了世界上第一颗人造卫星,开创了人类航天的新纪元,同时也意味着美苏竞争的日渐白炽化。二战后日本唯美国马首是瞻,《日美安全保障条约》将日本与美国的军事利益捆绑在了一起,日本成了美国对抗苏联的最前线"岗哨"——美国除了在日本驻扎海陆空军外,还利用日本开展谍报活动<sup>1</sup>。当时身为日本共产党员的安部公房强烈感受到国内政治局势随着美苏势力的消长而动荡,为刚刚实现战败后废墟重建的日本社会可能再次蒙上战争的阴影而感到忧虑。《第四间冰期》以缜密的逻辑推理以及丰富的遗传学、人机系统科学、物理学等知识为支撑,构建了一个基于人工智能技术("预言机")及生物技术("水栖人")开发"海底殖民地"的未来帝国主义争霸图景,蕴含着对当时美苏争霸格局下科技、军事技术与权力结合成为新的统治手段的揭示。

小说中,苏联预言世界"未来必将是共产主义社会"(安部公房,「第四間氷期」16)<sup>2</sup>,引起了美国的恐慌和抗议,并禁止日本运用预言机进行政治性预言。对"友邦"美国言听计从的政府当局下令,严格把控"预言方案"的审批,即使是研发人员也不得擅用机器。然而,预言机研发者惶惑地发现,归根到底没有哪个领域的"预言"是与政治完全无涉的,最终总会指向某种政治性,"预言方案"接连受阻。"预言机"未能投入实用阶段便被迫搁浅,不啻为对日本的内政外交受美国粗暴干涉而陷入窘境的讽喻。随着

<sup>1 1960</sup> 年 5 月,美国驻日本厚木基地的 U2 型侦察机以气象勘测为名侵入苏联领空被击落;同年 7 月,1 万 5 千名民众在横滨厚木 U2 型机基地附近游行,美军被迫从日本撤回 U2 型机。

<sup>2</sup> 有关《第四间冰期》的引文均来自安部公房:「第四間氷期」,『安部公房全集』第9巻, 東京:新潮社,1998年,第9-174页。凡未特殊说明,引文均出自笔者拙译,以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

情节的推进,主人公胜见博士发现,掌握着预言机研发中心命运的"项目委员会"与自己所追查的收购婴儿胚胎的"非法组织"竟然都是海底殖民地开发计划的构成部分,从属于国家最高权力机关,是不能宣张的"国家机密"。科学家及他们的研究成果作为最重要的国家战备资源而受到严密监控,哪怕是学界的精英,如果不能与权力当局站在同一立场则将面临被抹杀的命运。胜见的悲剧结局,是国家权力机构对科学及个人暴力干涉的影射,可视为对1930-60年代苏联科技史上臭名昭著的"李森科事件"的指涉,隐含了安部对科学与政治权力合谋、政治权威取代科学权威裁决科学论争的讽喻。

《第四间冰期》以未来人类面临的共同危机为背景,构建了一个"现在"与"未来"对峙的叙事空间,在影射日本当下政治生态的同时,从日本社会现实的个别性上升到人类共同体的普遍性层次,对挟裹着全人类的现代性危机展开反思。以下将通过分析作品对科技的异化以及现代性内生的悖论的揭示,探究安部公房对克服现代性消极面之途径的思考。

## 二、从"仆"到"神": 科技的异化与现代性的悖论

源于西方的"现代性"概念以破除宗教神话的"启蒙"为起点,以理性为价值核心,以摆脱宗教控制的"世俗化"为特征。然而,随着"理性"被推向神坛,现代性的悖论日渐暴露——"一方面主体的理性反思将人们从传统宗教迷信中解救出来,实现了精神的祛魅,释放了主体的力量;另一方面,主体自我意识的膨胀导致人与自然、人与社会的二分对立,激发主客体间不可调和的矛盾,使主客体间和解的可能不复存在"(韩秋红 孙颖 127)。于是,以马克思主义为首的西方哲学将关注焦点转向了现代性批判,并在西方马克思主义法兰克福学派多向度的批判理论中走向巅峰。与哲学思想领域从理论上对现代性的抽象、宏观批判相呼应,文学领域则往往通过虚构日常现实的叙事时空,从微观层面对现代性展开反思。

《第四间冰期》将背景设置为被生态危机所挟裹的人类近未来,呈现了生态灾难、殖民扩张、种族压迫、人的异化等一系列由科技异化带来的现代性危机。通过描写主人公胜见博士和信奉"预言机"的研究者们在价值观上的碰撞,将现代性危机置于既成价值观与"断裂的未来"对决的场域中,进而探讨科技伦理一人权、技术进步、理性主义等现代性诸问题中内含的"自我否定"因素。

首先,导致两者冲突的核心问题在于"水栖人"改造这一科技伦理范畴的命题: 迫于生态危机,人类是否有权将后代改造为能适应环境变化的"水

<sup>1 1930-1960</sup> 年代,李森科以"伪科学"获得斯大林和赫鲁晓夫的信任,荣居苏联科学院、列宁全苏科学院和乌克兰科学院的三科院士,利用意识形态斗争打击反对者和竞争对手,导致前苏联大批遗传学家遭迫害,生物学和遗传学发展长期停滞。该事件从根本上彰显科学与意识形态、国家政治之间的错综复杂的关系,是一起有着深刻的社会历史背景和深远意义的科学事件。

栖人"?"水栖人"(原本面临堕胎而被扼杀的人类胚胎)是否具有与"陆栖人"同样的生存发展权?

研究者们认为, 迫于地球海平面将上升 1000 米的事实, 开拓海底殖民地关乎人类的生死存亡、势在必行, "水栖人""水栖哺乳动物"作为顺应环境的"人为进化", 是必须捍卫的未来, 哪怕不得不牺牲当下人类的某些利益。与此相反, 胜见在伦理上无法接受"改造人类胚胎"的构想, 认为"水栖人"改造计划是残酷而反人道的, 改造人类胚胎并将其用于海底殖民地开拓, 是对人类的侮辱与背叛, 且必将招致"水栖人"的仇恨与反抗。

在关于"水栖人"生存发展权的命题上,研究者们向胜见展示"水栖人培育基地"的实地拍摄纪录,指出科学的胚胎培育和管理方式有利于"水栖人"健全地发育、成长;海底的培育环境大大提高了"水栖人"成长的"生物效率","水栖人"体力、智力的发育比在陆地上更臻于完善等,强调他们具有与"陆栖人"同等的生存发展权。然而,为了获取培育"水栖人"的胚胎,研究者们却以"未来大义"为名,不惜强权胁迫、乃至剥夺威胁其计划实施的人们的生命,无视个体的生存权,暴露出了去伦理化的技术理性引发的道德真空。而胜见认为对人类胚胎进行改造是违背伦理的反人道行为,却对于"堕胎"所涉及的伦理问题敷衍搪塞、避而不谈。同时,他在"水栖人"存在的合理性问题上也陷入了绝望的两难之中——作为一名高瞻远瞩的科学家,他承认"水栖人"的存在有着合理的一面,却无法接受自己的孩子成为"水栖人"的事实,试图追踪被夺走婴儿胚胎以便亲手结束其生命。可见,围绕"水栖人"所涉及的科技伦理与生存发展权问题,两者的伦理价值观都陷入了自我否定的逻辑悖论之中。

其次,两者的论战揭示了另一组耐人深思的命题: "现在"与"未来" 在价值上是否有优劣之分?为了"未来"而牺牲"现在"是否更符合"进步"的价值观?

崇尚理性与进步的研究者们更强调"未来"的价值,对科技发展将给人类带来更便捷、更高效、更舒适的未来深信不疑,同时认为,为了"未来"更美好的前景,要求当下利益做出妥协或牺牲也是理所当然的。他们认为胜见尽管拥有卓越的学识,却不具有"未来引领者"的素质,因为他不愿为了"未来"而牺牲"现在",其"保守""僵化"的思维模式令其无法克服当下的经验感觉和价值观而接受"断裂的未来"。然而,基于"进步"理念的"未来"观,与宗教尊崇死后世界/来世、轻视现世价值而强调当下须"隐忍"的逻辑,在本质上难道不是相通的吗?从这一角度上看,"进步"观无非是现代性自我赋权构建起来的新"信仰",以牺牲人的主体价值来成就社会的进步。胜见与"未来派"的价值观冲突,体现了"进步"理念在逻辑上的悖反——脱胎于西方启蒙主义"废神运动"的"理性"与"进步",成了凌驾于人的主体价值之上的新的"神"。

再次,围绕对胜见的"裁决",呈现了现代性悖论中最核心的价值观交锋——科技理性与价值理性孰轻孰重?对"理性"的尊崇是否必然伴随着对人的主观能动性的扼杀?

由于预言机预言胜见将公开海底殖民地开发计划而引起公众骚乱,因此, 为了让未来得以顺利发展, 胜见成了不得不抹除的障碍。研究助手赖木等人决 定营救胜见,设法让他改变"成见",顺应并拥护未来的发展蓝图,于是求助 于预言机得出胜见的"第二次预言值"。怎料, "第二次预言值"遵循某种理 性逻辑,策划了将胜见卷入杀人事件、强行为其妻子实施流产手术、夺走并改 造婴儿胚胎等一系列行动。在"引导"胜见窥见未来图景的一角之后,"第二 次预言值"宣告"冥顽不灵"的胜见仍将成为阻挠历史车轮前进的保守势力, 进而对他做出死亡裁决。令胜见错愕、狼狈的是,将自己推入万劫不复深渊的 不是什么庞大的犯罪组织,而是"第二次预言值"这一自身"理性"的投影! 出于自我辩护,他力陈预言机的存在价值仅仅在于提醒人们规避不利的"未 来",以便人们防范于未然。这一观点体现了胜见的"理性观",即工具理性 /科技理性是服务于人的价值理性的"仆从",必须以人的价值实现为导向, 在人的主观能动性的限制下发挥作用。然而,笃信预言机权威的研究者们却将 胜见对主体价值理性的推崇视为蒙昧之举,认为他作为预言机的研发者却质疑 其价值,对于科学家而言无疑是无可救药的堕落。胜见与自身的"第二次预言 值"之间的对峙深刻地揭示了科技的异化以及现代性价值观中"理性至上"理 念内生的悖论:以理性逻辑为支撑的科学技术恰如"普罗米修斯之火"给人类 的生活质量带来了飞跃式的提升,是人实现自身价值的手段;然而对科技理性 的深度依赖使人反过来受技术/工具的支配,忽视了本应与技术同步发展的道 德伦理规范, 甚至忘却了人本身的价值。

小说的末尾展示了预言机指引人类逐步踏入"水陆共生"的前景,同时宣告了胜见沦为"未来"蓝图之牺牲品的命运。挟裹着胜见的种种冲突与论争,蕴含了安部公房对现代性价值观内生的悖论的揭示以及对科技伦理问题的深刻省思:人权、进步、理性主义等现代性价值观在理性逻辑的推演下最终走向了自我否定的一面,现代性内生的诸种价值对立就像"麦比乌斯之环"般陷入了悖谬之境。

在揭示现代性内生的悖论这一点上,《第四间冰期》与旨在批判现代性 "暴走"导致灾难的"反乌托邦"题材小说有着亲缘性。然而,《第四间冰期》在揭示现代性所激化的矛盾对立的同时,又否定了逃避对立、退回"前现代"的可能性,胜见的命运同时也意味着固守成见、拒绝"断裂的未来"的僵化思想的败北。在安部看来,"偏见无非是情绪的模式化观念,是对新的认识的过敏反应"(安部公房,「『偏見』を育成しょう」118),克服偏见和思维定式、勇于接受未曾预见的未来之挑战才是现代人应有的态度。这种旨在打破既成思维框架、设想未来可能出现的挑战的积极介入态度,可以

说是《第四间冰期》有别于"反乌托邦"题材小说的最大特征,也是安部用于探索克服现代性消极面的思想武器。

### 三、伦理审视与价值反思:克服现代性消极面的途径

《第四间冰期》所展示的海底殖民地的未来图景中,科学家通过基因科技将人类胚胎改造成"水栖人",并将其训练成为海底拓荒者,进而开启人类征服海洋的新纪元。这一乌托邦式的构想,与阿道司•伦纳德•赫胥黎(Aldous Leonard Huxley,1894-1963)的《美丽新世界》(Brave New World, 1932)有着明显的亲缘性。

两部作品的互文性体现在其展现的未来图景都建立在人类文明遭到自身失控的欲望重创(战争废墟、粮食危机、生态危机等)之后的反省和修正,然而在本质上却依然无法超越现代性的制约,奠定其未来社会根基的原理(福特主义、进化论、人类中心主义)无不体现出用"理性"的铠甲全副武装的人类对自然万物的傲然姿态。一方面,"进步的"人类信仰着、并深度依赖于科技理性,利用基因技术介入人类胚胎改造使之顺应理想社会的运作,致力于构建一个安定、和谐的共同体;另一方面,对不认同或有阻碍社会发展之嫌的个体进行规训、制裁,又暴露出极权体制对个体价值理性的践踏。此外,两部作品都对生物技术运用以及"改造人"的生存状态展开了细致而深入的描述,揭示了科技理性对伦理尺度的挑战。两位作者都立足于创作当下的社会现状,在洞悉现代性的种种悖谬的基础上,设想以推崇"理性""科学""进步"等资产阶级核心价值观为特征的现代性不加限制地发展下去可能导致的结果,通过科幻小说这一体裁表达自身对人类共同体命运的忧虑。

然而,两部作品在对各自描绘的未来图景的价值判断方面,却有着本质的区别。《美丽新世界》所描绘的基于福特主义原理的社会体制尽管稳定且给人以安全感,但其集权性、等级制的组织机构,刻板的管理方式以及枯燥的工作形式却是违背人性的:一方面,工人只是标准化的生产流水线中的一个环节,完全不需要脑力劳动或创造性;另一方面,该社会极力倡导消费和娱乐,由此带动社会经济的发展。然而,对于天生具有精神追求的人性而言,不具创造性的劳作与纯粹娱乐、消费终究无法填补精神的空虚,于是便需要借助从生理与心理双重"制约"以及致幻药"索麻"对人施与深度的欺骗与麻醉。由此可见,赫胥黎对自身描绘的"乌托邦"图景持强烈的讽刺与批判态度。与《美丽新世界》鲜明的"反乌托邦"性质不同,《第四间冰期》中提示的未来图景更着眼于对科技的善用及人的主观能动性,可视为安部公房对克服现代性之"消极面"的积极探索。例如,作品中描绘的"压缩空气""气化性火药"等种种能在水中应用的科技成果无疑大大地拓展了人类的生存空间,提示了一种克服人类极限的可能性,体现了人类发挥"能动

性变化"的力量克服生态危机的积极探索行动。

文学伦理学批评认为,"科学选择是人类文明在经历伦理选择之后正在或即将经历的一个阶段","使人变成科学的伦理人";"科学选择强调三个方面,一是人如何发展科学和利用科学;二是如何处理科学对人的影响及科学影响人的后果;三是应该如何认识和处理人同科学的关系"(聂珍钊251-252)。安部公房强调科技的伦理承载,指出"大气污染、核武器等固然是不容分辨的怪物,是毋庸置疑的恶。然而其责任真的在于技术本身吗?不追究企业的利润追求、国家的利己主义、产业的军事化等对技术的滥用,而一味单纯地进行技术主义批判实属偷梁换柱的做法"(安部公房,『死に急ぐ鯨たち』 16);"那些光会抱怨人造人之邪恶以及机械主义之非人性的人,无非是由于缺乏想象力且畏惧自由罢了"(安部公房,「1957、アルファの逆説」 236)。在安部看来,"人造人""机械主义"等本身并不会导致"恶",科技理性的消极面也未必不可规避,关键在于作为科技利用者的"人"是否能够视伦理为科技发展的内在维度,对这些"恶"与"消极面"的产生始终保持警觉和批判立场,将"欲望"收敛于伦理尺度的"警戒线"之内。安部的科技伦理观,正体现了"科学的伦理人"的时代担当。

综上,《第四间冰期》在"改造人"的构想以及对现代性悖论的揭露上与《美丽新世界》有着互文性,然而在对"技术主义"及人的主观能动性的态度立场方面两者却有着本质性的差异,前者描绘了人类利用科技实施极权统治之未来的"恐怖",而后者则着眼于在科技的武装下,各方面"资质"获得大幅拓展的人类,在面对始料未及的生存危机及伦理困境时所展现的潜在可能性。从这层意义上看,《第四间冰期》构建的未来图景既是对当下现实的讽喻,同时也通过"断裂性""怪物性"的假设,以开放式的阅读空间提示了一种切换既成的价值观及道德伦理立场来审视"未来"的可能性。

#### 结语

科幻小说《第四间冰期》通过"假说"构建基于当下现实延伸而至的未来图景,讽喻式地指涉了同时代的历史性事件,同时在普遍性的层面上对深陷现代性价值观悖论中的人类共同体的命运展开思索,体现了安部公房积极介入社会现实的责任意识以及对人类命运共同体的人文关怀。进而,从作品与"反乌托邦"著作《美丽新世界》的互文性和异质性比较中,可以看出安部在"现代性的功过"判断上拒斥既成价值观念约束的开放性态度,以及倡导以人的主观能动性和不断的伦理审视、价值反思来遏制现代性消极面的主张,这对跨入人工智能时代的当代社会仍然具有深刻的启示意义。

#### **Works Cited**

安部公房:『死に急ぐ鯨たち』。東京:新潮社,1986年。

- [Abe, Kobo. Whales Eager to Die. Tokyo: Shinchosha Publishing Co, Ltd., 1986.]
- --:「『偏見』を育成しょう」, 『安部公房全集』第7巻。東京: 新潮社,1998年,第 116-120 頁。
- [—. "Foster 'Prejudice'." in Complete Works of Kobo Abe vol.7. Tokyo: Shinchosha Publishing Co, Ltd., 1998: 116-120.]
- ---: 「1957、アルファの逆説」,『安部公房全集』第8巻。東京:新潮社,1998年,第 236-237 頁。
- [—. "1957, Antithesis of Alpha." in Complete Works of Kobo Abe vol.8. Tokyo: Shinchosha Publishing Co, Ltd., 1998: 236-237.]
- 一: 「第四間氷期」,『安部公房全集』第 9 巻。東京: 新潮社,1998 年,第 9-174 頁。
- [-... "Inter Ice Age 4." in Complete Works of Kobo Abe vol.9. Tokyo: Shinchosha Publishing Co, Ltd., 1998: 9-174.]
- ―: 「SF、この名づけがたきもの」,『安部公房全集』第 20 巻。東京: 新潮社,1999 年, 第 52-54 頁。
- [—. "SF, Thing Difficult to Name." in *The Complete Works of Kobo Abe* vol.20. Tokyo: Shinchosha Publishing Co, Ltd., 1999: 52-54.]
- 韩秋红、孙颖: "现代性理论的逻辑理路与西方马克思主义的独特运思",《马克思主义理论 学科研究》2 (2018): 125-135。
- [Han Qiuhong and Sun Ying. "The Logical Theory of Modernity Theory and the Unique Thinking of Western Marxism." Studies on Marxist Theory 2 (2018): 125-135.]
- 加藤優:「ジャンル化への違和:安部公房と『SFマガジン』」,『早稲田大学大学院教育学 研究科紀要』別冊 27 号 2 (2020): 15-27。
- [Kato, Yu. "The Sence of Discomfort in Establishing Science Fiction: Kobo Abe and 'Science Fiction Magazine'." The bulletin of the Graduate School of Education of Waseda University. Separate volume 27-2 (2020): 15-27.]
- 李先胤: 『21 世紀に安部公房を読む:水の暴力性と流動する世界』。東京: 勉誠出版,2016年。
- [Lee Sunyoon. Reading Abe Kobo in the 21st Century: The Violence of Water and The Fluid World. Tokyo: Bensei Press, 2016.]
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- 杣谷英紀: 「安部公房『第四間氷期』論: SF・仮説・グロテスク」, 『日本文藝研究』第 66 巻 1 (2014): 135-156。
- [Somatani, Hidenori. "Kobo Abe's 'Inter Ice Age 4': SF-Fiction Grotesque." Nihon Bunge Kenkyu 66-1 (2014): 135-156.]
- 鳥羽耕史: 「安部公房『第四間氷期』-水のなかの革命」, 『国文学研究』123 (1997): 106-116。
- [Toba, Koji. "Kobo Abe's 'Inter Ice Age 4': Revolution in Water." Kokubungaku Kenkyu 123 (1997): 106-116.]

# 莎士比亚《奥赛罗》悲剧的伦理原因 Ethical Causes of Shakespeare's Tragedy *Othello*

李正栓(Li Zhengshuan) 朱慧敏(Zhu Huimin)

内容摘要:《奥赛罗》揭示了人类生活深层文化,展示了莎士比亚对人类伦理的思考,有不同于莎士比亚另外三部悲剧的教育效果。这部戏剧既继承了悲剧传统,又用其时代中的鲜活例证创新了悲剧的主题,表现了悲剧与伦理的深层关系。《奥赛罗》悲剧的形成原因与 16 世纪威尼斯的伦理环境密不可分。从文学伦理学批评视角看来,《奥赛罗》实则是在伦理混乱与伦理失序中产生的伦理悲剧。本文对《奥赛罗》悲剧成因进行深入挖掘,以文本为例证,发现种族伦理和性别伦理对《奥赛罗》悲剧的形成起到决定性作用。

关键词:《奥赛罗》;文学伦理学批评;悲剧成因;伦理价值;伦理秩序作者简介:李正栓,河北师范大学外国语学院教授、博士生导师,主要研究领域为文艺复兴时期文学、文学翻译与批评等;朱慧敏,河北师范大学外国语学院硕士研究生,主要研究领域为英美文学、文学翻译。本文为河北师范大学在读研究生创新能力培养资助项目"文学伦理学批评视域下的《奥赛罗》伦理思想研究"【项目批号:CXZZSS2022036】和河北师范大学大学生课外学术科技创新创业竞赛资助项目"文学伦理学批评和数字人文视域下的莎士比亚悲剧的伦理研究"【项目批号:BA2022319183128】的阶段性成果。

Title: Ethical Causes of Shakespeare's Tragedy Othello

cal order

Abstract: Othello has an effect of education that differs from Shakespeare's three other tragedies, revealing the deep culture of human life and demonstrating Shakespeare's reflections on human ethics. It inherits the tragic tradition and innovates the theme of tragedy with vivid examples of that time, showing the deep relationship between tragedy and ethics. The reasons for the formation of the tragedy Othello are inextricably linked to the ethical environment of Venice in the 16th century. From the perspective of ethical literary criticism, in fact, Othello is an ethical tragedy arising from ethical confusion and ethical disorder. This paper explores the causes of Shakespeare's tragedy Othello, taking the text as an example, and finds that racial ethics and gender ethics play a decisive role in the formation of the tragedy Othello. Keywords: Othello; ethical literary criticism; cause of tragedy; ethical value; ethi-

Authors: Li Zhengshuan, Ph.D., is Professor and Doctoral Supervisor in the

School of Foreign Studies at Hebei Normal University (Shijiazhuang 050024, China). His area of research focuses mainly on literature in English Renaissance and literary translation and criticism (E-mail: zhengshuanli@126.com). Zhu Huimin, is MA Candidate in the School of Foreign Studies at Hebei Normal University (Shijiazhuang 050024, China). Her academic research focuses mainly on British and American literature and literary translation (E-mail: zhuhuimin1999@126.com).

# 引言

学界对《奥赛罗》的悲剧成因,众说纷纭,各有所长,主要有轻信说、 性格说、自卑心理说、嫉妒心理说、种族歧视说等。伦理说属于弱势,伦理 分析较为鲜见。新黑格尔派的代表安德鲁·塞西尔·布拉德利(Andrew Cecil Bradley) 在《论莎士比亚悲剧》 (Shakespearean Tragedy: Lectures on Hamlet, Othello, King Lear, Macbeth 1992) 中以黑格尔思想为哲学基础,强调了道德秩 序在莎士比亚悲剧《奥赛罗》中的重要性。「可见,伦理在《奥赛罗》中的作 用大,具有研究价值。

莎士比亚戏剧"以伦理建构为主要目标"(刘茂生 44),教诲价值大, 富有人文主义特征。如果仔细研读《奥赛罗》,读者会发现《奥赛罗》蕴藏 着很强的伦理意识。《奥赛罗》悲剧形成的原因与16世纪威尼斯的伦理环境 密不可分。从文学伦理学批评视角来看,《奥赛罗》实则是在伦理混乱与伦 理失序中产生的伦理悲剧。本文主要对《奥赛罗》悲剧成因进行挖掘,分析《奥 赛罗》中的种族伦理和性别伦理,并结合戏剧情节,分析种族伦理和性别伦 理对戏剧结局的影响。莎士比亚研究对我国文化建设、思想建设、文明建设 和伦理道德建设具有推动作用、影响积极且巨大。通过对《奥赛罗》悲剧伦 理原因的探析,我们能进一步展开伦理思想的研究,助力解决现实问题。显然, 本文的研究具有重要的启迪功能和教育意义。

#### 一、众说纷纭的悲剧原因

多年来,学者们对《奥赛罗》悲剧的原因进行了探析,并且争议很大。 贺祥麟等学者支持轻信说,认为角色行为是根本原因,是奥赛罗轻信小人的 行为导致了悲剧,而非嫉妒等原因。2苗艳等学者将奥赛罗悲剧归因于人物性 格,认为当时社会环境和奥赛罗本身的人生经历所造成的自卑性格导致了悲 剧的发生。3 曾瑞云、李倩梅等学者从心理学和精神分析角度分析《奥赛罗》

<sup>1</sup> See Andrew Cecil Bradley, Shakespearean Tragedy: Lectures on Hamlet, Othello, King Lear, Macbeth. New York: Macmillan Education, 1992) 23.

<sup>2</sup> 参见 贺祥麟: "介绍一位莎士比亚的朋友——评方平《和莎士比亚交个朋友吧》",《外 国文学研究》1(1985):74-81。

<sup>3</sup> 参见 苗艳: "自卑引发奥赛罗悲剧的性格因素",《电影文学》3(2009): 140-141。

并进行归因。曾瑞云和李倩梅还将奥赛罗和中国影视剧中的"凤凰男"进行类比,认为正是因为奥赛罗的既自负又自卑的复杂心理引发了对副将凯西奥嫉妒和怨恨,最终对妻子采取极端行为,造成了悲剧。<sup>1</sup> 方凡等学者从后殖民主义和种族歧视进行解读和归因。方凡从后殖民的视角解读《奥赛罗》,将奥赛罗的自卑心理和悲剧结局归因于中心与边缘文化,将殖民与被殖民的两方进行鲜明对比,进一步展现作品中殖民主义的种族优越感和文化优越感,剖析被殖民地人的自卑心理和挣扎行为,再现中心文化与边缘文化由平衡转向失衡的过程。<sup>2</sup>

以上观点和说法都正确,也能得到文本的支持,有合理性。轻信说虽然看到角色行为影响戏剧情节的发展,但对决定行为的人物性格和心理因素关注不足。性格说和心理说主张的性格和心理仅从奥赛罗个人出发,其实社会大环境对奥赛罗个人性格和心理造成的影响更大。种族歧视说从后殖民主义和欧洲中心主义出发,认为是种族歧视影响了奥赛罗的行为、性格和心理,将解读视角扩大到社会的范畴,但它尚未提及伦理对种族观念等方面的影响作用。伦理说虽鲜见,但有更大意义和价值,强调了伦理混乱和伦理失序的影响,从社会的宏观层面分析种族伦理混乱和性别伦理混乱造成的伦理失序,挖掘形成悲剧的伦理因素,揭示社会秩序的重要性,发出伦理道德警示。"读者在重构、阐释、判断文学世界的价值观念的过程中,获得道德教益与伦理启迪,进而影响、改变和塑造其所在的现实世界"(尚必武 95),由此可见,文学作品中的伦理价值巨大。

"长久以来,文学批评过度强调文学形式而忽视了文学中的伦理"<sup>3</sup>(Tian Duan 574)。伦理值得关注,需要多加关注。文学伦理学批评"旨在从伦理学的角度研究文学叙事,阐释作家的伦理思想在文学创作中的反映、作品中人物行为的伦理本质,以及文学作品对社会风尚的道德训诫等"(徐思园 田俊武 108)。文学作品对读者进行道德启迪,富含伦理教诲作用。聂珍钊认为,伦理乃指导道德行为的道德准则与行为规范。<sup>4</sup>以此理论可察,种族差异引发的自卑和嫉妒心理及其衍生的个人行为是表层原因,伦理混乱导致的伦理失序才是深层原因。《奥赛罗》戏剧性很强:若奥赛罗对苔丝狄蒙娜下手再晚一点,或者爱米利娅早一点揭发他丈夫从她手中抢走她捡到的手帕去陷害凯西奥这一真相,这起"手绢门"也不会以悲剧作为告终。深入分析其中的伦理,就会发现,该剧成为悲剧是必然的。文学是"伦理道德的产物",是"伦理道德在特定历史时期下的独特呈现",是"伦理的艺术"(Yang 270)。《奥赛罗》主要蕴含着两种伦理:种族伦理和性别伦理。该剧主要围绕着这两种

<sup>1</sup> 参见 曾瑞云 李倩梅: "城市里的外乡人: 奥赛罗与中国电视剧中的'凤凰男'", 《吉首大学学报(社会科学版)》, S2(2018): 126-128。

<sup>2</sup> 参见方凡: "《奥赛罗》悲剧与后殖民解读", 《求索》, 12(2005): 179-181。

<sup>3</sup> 本文外文引文均出自笔者。

<sup>4</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第254页。

伦理及其伦理秩序的变化而推动情节的发展,导致悲剧结局)。

#### 二、对种族伦理的挑战

聂珍钊指出,身份即标识,身份与责任和义务要对应。1《奥赛罗》的 种族伦理可谓是经典。古往今来, 众人对莎士比亚在《奥赛罗》中所展现的 种族观念和性别观念进行了激烈的讨论。<sup>2</sup>在种族伦理的影响下,当时社会普 遍对黑人持歧视态度。伊阿古屡屡在言语中透露出他对奥赛罗的歧视。在第 一幕第一场,伊阿古十分埋怨奥赛罗,表示自己"只在这位黑将军的麾下充 一名旗官"(390)³,他还在大街上朝勃拉班修家高喊"一头老黑羊在跟您 的母白羊交尾"(391)。这是很难听的话,把男女结合说成是非人类间的 交媾。伊阿古认为屈居于一个黑人之下是白人的耻辱,认为白人女子与一个 黑人男子结婚只是动物性交尾,是非人行为。这是典型的白人至上的伦理。 伊阿古和勃拉班修是这种种族伦理的典型的代表。虽然奥赛罗贵为将军,为 威尼斯做出重大贡献并且是伊阿古的上司,伊阿古仍对奥赛罗抱有种族伦理 偏见和敌意,始终强调他"黑",将奥赛罗的异族身份放在首位,蔑称他为 "老黑羊"、"黑将军",并恶语中伤,说"让您的女儿给一头黑马骑了, 替您生下一些马子马孙,攀一些马亲马眷"(392)。这可不是希腊神话的 叙事,而是极其恶毒的中伤。此语境描述的是动物间的交配,其中的"马" 有贬损的意味。对于奥赛罗来说,这是非人的中伤。只有伊阿古这种恶毒的 人才能想象出马与人交配的意象。伊阿古将奥赛罗比喻为被驯化的畜生,使 之非人格化,置他于从属地位,突显了种族伦理。他暗讽二人的婚姻"破坏 了礼仪和血统的自然秩序"(胡鹏 91)。他是在说,奥赛罗与苔丝狄蒙娜 的结合破坏了白人尊贵、黑人低劣的逻辑和伦理,糟蹋了正常秩序。勃拉班 修控诉奥赛罗时,屡屡称奥赛罗用"魔术"引诱,用"妖法"蛊惑,用"邪 恶的符咒"欺诱天真无邪的苔丝狄蒙娜,将奥赛罗同"邪恶"联系起来,强 调奥赛罗的异族身份,用种族伦理施压,对立"黑"与"白",力图严惩奥 寨罗。

奥赛罗与苔丝狄蒙娜虽然最终成婚,但其结合有一定的特殊性。其一是,苔丝狄蒙娜是因为经常听被父亲邀请到家中的奥赛罗讲战斗故事而主动产生爱慕之心,并非完全是奥赛罗对她诱惑,在她父亲"引狼入室"时,她是主动产生爱慕之情的一方。其二是,威尼斯当时面临着巨大的危机,正与土耳其交战,因此,国家需要奥赛罗这样的军事人才为之效力。公爵和元老院表示,在土耳其进攻塞浦路斯岛这一紧急军情下,派奥赛罗镇守才是明智之举,只有派他去"才可以万无一失"(第一幕第三场)(403),连伊阿古

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第263页。

<sup>2</sup> See Gary Taylor, et al, eds., The New Oxford Shakespeare, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2016.

<sup>3</sup> 本文有关《奥赛罗》的引文均来自威廉·莎士比亚,《莎士比亚全集 悲剧卷 上》,朱生豪译,南京:译林出版社,1999年。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

也认为"没有第二个人有像他那样的才能可以担当这一个重任"(第一幕第一场)(393)。正是因为威尼斯高层有求于军事才能傲人的奥赛罗,奥赛罗才能被允许与苔丝狄蒙娜成婚。是国家利益和国家安危让白人贵族们暂时放下种族歧视,允许苔丝狄蒙娜与奥赛罗成婚。在某种程度上,统治阶层以个别女子换国家安宁,这与中国历史上不同民族之间和亲是一个道理。虽然以苔丝狄蒙娜和凯西奥为代表的一小部分人对黑人是不歧视的,这场异族通婚得以在表面上被白人上层承认,但异族通婚仍被视为不同种族之间的"杂交",这是奥赛罗婚姻的不稳定因素,是隐患,也是矛盾与冲突的伦理根源,是伊阿古能成功挑唆奥赛罗的根本原因。

奥赛罗虽然是黑人,但其自身也受到白人社会意识形态的影响,种族意 识根植于他的思想中,这导致他对自身黑人身份的不认同和排斥。显然,奥 赛罗的猜忌并非只是听信谗言,其根源在于他对自己伦理身份的不确定。《奥 赛罗》中多处表现了奥赛罗对自己黑人身份的不认同、不自信和他深植于心 的种族观念。虽然他为自己营造了有益于自己的"利黑"舆论导向,屡屡强 调自己的贵族出身和出色的才能,这本身就是外强中干,试图通过舆论重塑 伦理身份,说自己祖先高贵,有资格骄傲(第一幕第二场)(395),他还说 苔丝狄蒙娜慧眼识他(第三幕第三场)(438),但事实上,他越是着力强调 自己的贵族血统和才能优势, 越是暴露出他对自身种族伦理身份的自我否定, 暴露他的自卑心理。他实则十分在乎种族差异,认同白人社会强加于黑人的 种族伦理。徐彬认为,"以奥赛罗为代表的非洲人(或非裔黑人)为融入欧 洲白人社会而与自己的种族和出生地断绝联系,这意味着进入种族隔离、种 族歧视与迫害的'隔都'"(87)。他想挤进白人社会是自断其根,自己疏离, 加入种族隔离社会,是自毁。奥赛罗意志不坚定,不敌种族伦理,终究只能 顺从于种族等级藩篱下的伦理,受其桎梏。在当时的种族伦理秩序中,异族 不能通婚。正是种族伦理影响下形成的种族伦理秩序给奥赛罗造成了伦理困 境,到底是为了坚持和苔丝狄蒙娜的恋情而违背伦理秩序,还是牺牲爱情而 维护伦理呢? 奥赛罗在考虑利益和风险后,选择继续坚持和苔丝狄蒙娜的恋 情。他碍于种族伦理秩序,只能以私定终身的方式与身为元老女儿的苔丝狄 蒙娜秘密结婚,不敢正大光明地提出求婚,不敢公然地大肆对抗种族伦理, 或许他内心也知道,若他正式地公开求婚,很可能会被拒绝。他甚至认为苔 丝狄蒙娜"染上污垢"(第三幕第三场444),因他而变黑了。

正是因为种族伦理认知,奥赛罗内心深处是不自信的。他有了种族自卑的情绪,无法认同黑人的伦理身份,无意中制造了自己和凯西奥以及自己和 苔丝狄蒙娜之间的隔阂。种族伦理观念使奥赛罗丧失了理智,他被自卑、嫉 妒和狂怒冲昏了头脑,无法冷静地分析现状,混淆了谎言和事实。奥赛罗知 道白人对他的成见颇深,所以轻信了伊阿古所虚构的凯西奥的梦话。即使凯 西奥曾在苔丝狄蒙娜抱怨奥赛罗时帮他辩护,但奥赛罗仍理所当然地认为,

作为白人的凯西奥会潜意识地在睡梦中说出歧视他黑人伦理身份的言语。一 从伊阿古口中听闻苔丝狄蒙娜出轨的流言, 自卑的奥赛罗便潜意识地将苔丝 狄蒙娜不贞的行为归因于自己的黑皮肤,认为她后悔嫁给一个异族人。奥赛 罗臣服于威尼斯白人社会,精神上接受了种族伦理。 奥赛罗将其与苔丝狄蒙 娜的婚姻视为获得白人社会认可的捷径也正是奥赛罗接受白人种族伦理观念 的体现之一。正是因为种族伦理下的自卑引发的愤怒,使得奥赛罗如此轻易 地中了伊阿古的圈套,听信伊阿古诽谤,怒杀了自己的妻子。

### 三、性别伦理的"破"与"守"

《奥赛罗》突出反映了性别伦理,女性仍无法完全挣脱性别等级藩篱。 威尼斯公国是传统社会,采用父系制。在当时的威尼斯,女性被物化,不是 属于父亲就是属于丈夫,始终是被支配的一方。

在当时的威尼斯社会,性别伦理下的亲子关系分明,等级井然。"家庭 是最基层、最古老的组织形式和伦理关系,又是人类最真实、最直接的伦理 实体"(袁小明 54)。所以,当苔丝狄蒙娜和奥赛罗私奔时,勃拉班修起初 坚定地认为是奥赛罗诱拐了自己的女儿,罪责全在于奥赛罗。勃拉班修之所 以对女儿与奥赛罗私定终身一事如此愤怒,不仅仅是因为苔丝狄蒙娜与奥赛 罗婚姻会对自己社会地位与前途发展的有消极影响而忧愁,还因为女儿挑战 了父权制社会下父亲的权威,男性的社会地位受到了威胁。当他得知自己女 儿是自愿私奔时,他的愤怒到达了最高峰,因女儿违背性别伦理,不听从父 亲安排而震怒,选择与之断绝关系,以此捍卫自己的男性权威和地位。勃拉 班修将苔丝狄梦娜当作是自己的所有物,认为其私人物品被奥赛罗玷污。若 非顾及到国家的利益与公爵和其他元老们的权威,勃拉班修定不会善罢甘休。 他也试图通过责骂女儿,挑拨女儿和奥赛罗之间的关系等方式来将她"引回 正道",恢复性别伦理,修补女儿私奔造成的伦理裂痕。显然,勃拉班修做 出的这些努力都付之东流。

"作者在文学创作过程中不可避免地对虚构人物、写作素材进行道德判 断"(徐明莺 李正财 127)。可以看出,《奥赛罗》中的苔丝狄蒙娜彰显了 女性之美。她善良、优雅、漂亮,备受称赞。但正是这样一位典型的美丽女性, 突破了父权制社会的等级观念,并不事事盲目顺从于父亲,倡导了进步的女 性价值观。文学伦理学批评强调读者挖掘文本中的历史语境和伦理语境,重 新发现值得当代人重温的历史价值。1 苔丝狄蒙娜的私奔着实是逆行,违背父 命,有悖常理,不合性别伦理中的亲子伦理道德。她挑战了男性的权威,敢 于为自己未来的幸福发声, 拒绝了父亲的安排, 与奥赛罗私奔, 这在当时可 谓是"离经叛道"。在当时父权制伦理秩序井然的威尼斯社会,苔丝狄蒙娜

<sup>1</sup> See Charles Ross, "A Conceptual Map of Ethical Literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Forum for World Literature Studies 1 (2015): 10.

的私奔引起了性别伦理中亲子关系上的伦理失序。苔丝狄蒙娜颠覆传统,不囿于种族伦理,打破世俗成规,且不惜违背性别伦理,欺骗父亲,逃离家庭,与奥赛罗成婚,有其社会进步性。"从伦理角度看,苔丝狄蒙娜最终的死亡也是对她挑战伦理禁忌的惩罚"(李正栓 关宁 96)。苔丝狄蒙娜在亲子关系上的"惊世骇俗"进一步加深了性别伦理的失序状态,成为了父权制社会违反性别伦理中的"他者"。伦理失序之下,夫妻间的忠诚与信任难以维系。并且,女性的自我意识被性别伦理压制,难逃悲惨结局。

奥赛罗有着根深蒂固的性别等级观念,固守性别伦理。正因如此,勃拉 班修警告奥赛罗苔丝狄蒙娜会像背叛父亲一样背叛他,表示"她也会把你欺 骗"(第一幕第三场)(405)、伊阿古暗示苔丝狄蒙娜欺骗自己的丈夫,假 意"提醒"奥赛罗"留心观察"(第三幕第三场)(438)这样的两处话语才 会起到离间夫妻的作用。伊阿古的这一招是灵验的,因为奥赛罗本身的性别 伦理使他相信了伊阿古的话。如果奥赛罗没有这种观念,伊阿古的话是不能 起到任何作用的。所以,这场悲剧中,奥赛罗自身性别伦理观念是内因,对 悲剧起着催生作用。奥赛罗盲目轻信伊阿古的谗言,发挥想象,将苔丝狄蒙 娜违背父亲的性别伦理破坏进一步发散,延伸至背叛丈夫的性别伦理,不相 信苔丝狄蒙娜的坚贞, 怀疑苔丝狄蒙娜会打破禁忌, 红杏出墙, 挑战丈夫的 权威,再次违背性别伦理。也正是因为,在当时性别伦理的影响下,男女地 位不平等,奥赛罗才模棱两可地试探、嘲讽、责骂苔丝狄蒙娜,拒绝以平等 的态度和苔丝狄蒙娜沟通,不开诚布公地梳理事件线索,无法早点查明真相。 这既是作为黑人的"他者"的自卑的仰视,也是作为父权制社会中的男性对 女性"他者"的自大的俯视。同时, 苔丝狄蒙娜也做出了较为符合当时女性 伦理身份的伦理选择,她面对丈夫的质疑却没解释,只是归因于自己,认为 是自己或许有不当言行惹得奥赛罗怀疑,错失了解开误会的大好时机。如果 苔丝狄蒙娜有反抗男性至上的思想据理力争并勇敢斗争,或许会有别样的结 果。这也在某种程度上反映苔丝狄蒙娜的宿命论——即一个悲剧常有的元素, 认为女性就该听从命运安排。聂珍钊认为,"伦理选择中的情感在特定环境 或语境中受到理性的约束,使之符合道德准则与行为规范"(250)。奥赛罗 掩饰自己的兽性因子,以"避免其他男性也同他一样受害"为借口,采用所 谓的正义和理性的姿态和伦理身份来维护性别伦理,捍卫男性的主导地位和 既得利益,通过惩罚苔丝狄蒙娜来实现自己的私欲。因此,两人的爱情最终 功亏一篑,以悲剧作结。理性意识自始至终都在伦理选择中发挥作用。理性 意识的缺乏会使人"习惯于将身份的确认托付给他者,而不是依靠自身力量 去主动建构自己的身份"(任洁 85)。显然,此时的奥赛罗缺乏理性意识, 做出了错误的选择,酿成了悲剧。他还以为自己代表男性判处了背叛男性的 女性,殊不知他杀害了信赖、听从男性的忠贞妇女。这是绝妙的反讽。"人 性虽然会被兽性干扰,但最终受制于既定的伦理法则"(石雅楠 156)。最终,

奥赛罗得知真相,他的悲剧性自刎是他对自己错杀苔丝狄蒙娜的行为做出的 忏悔,也是奥赛罗善的伦理选择的表达。

#### 结语

《奥赛罗》突出反映了种族伦理和性别伦理对戏剧结局的影响。"禁忌 是古代人类伦理秩序形成的基础,也是伦理秩序的保障"(聂珍钊 261)。 在伦理混乱与伦理失序之下, 理性和禁忌缺位会致使戏剧最终以悲剧结尾。 苔丝狄蒙娜和奥赛罗的结合突破了种族伦理和性别伦理,超前于文艺复兴时 期父权制社会下的伦理,门不当,户不对,其行为引起了伦理混乱,致使伦 理失序,最终导致了这场婚姻的悲剧。从伦理的角度来看, 苔丝狄蒙娜和奥 赛罗的结合确实有违种族伦理和性别伦理,破坏了伦理秩序,打乱了种族观 念盛行的父权制社会中的等级关系,导致了最后以悲剧收场。当这段跨种族 的恋情被公之于众,种族伦理被破坏,伦理秩序受到巨大挑战,白人利益受 到威胁,势必会有人从中阻碍,以维护种族伦理秩序。在伦理的维护与破坏中, 易酿成悲剧。莎士比亚虽然在相当程度上代表了文艺复兴的先进思想,然而 我们发现, 莎士比亚是个充满矛盾的作家, 是个扫描社会犄角旮旯、洞察社 会一切现象的作家,他对女性的描写也是含混的,有时对女性推崇备至,刻 画出不靠父母和丈夫的独立女性,甚至女扮男装、舌斗群儒的鲍西娅,有时 却利用人物台词贬低女性,说什么女性水性杨花,有时通过人物塑造如此刻 画女性,以苔丝狄蒙娜为例。他全面地、立体地展示了人类命运和社会现象。 莎士比亚是个说不尽的莎士比亚,此话令人信服,耐人寻味。

#### **Works Cited**

- 胡鹏: "摩尔人、改宗者与土耳其人:论《奥瑟罗》中的奥瑟罗",《外语研究》5(2020): 89-95+112。
- [Hu Peng. "Moor, Convert and Turk: Othello in *Othello*." Foreign Languages Research 5 (2020): 89-95+112.]
- 李正栓、关宁: "文学伦理学批评视域下莎士比亚四大悲剧中女性形象研究",《文学跨学科研究》 5(2021): 89-98。
- [Li Zhengshuan and Guan Ning. "A Study of the Female Images in Shakespeare's Four Tragedies from Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism." *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* 5 (2021): 89-98.]
- 刘茂生: "英国戏剧叙事的伦理传统",《广东外语外贸大学学报》1(2022):42-52+158。
- [Liu Maosheng. "The Ethical Traditions in British Drama Narration." *Journal of Guangdong University of Foreign Studies* 1 (2022): 42-52+158.]
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

- 任洁: "论村上春树《挪威的森林》中的身份困惑与伦理思考",《当代外国文学》3(2020): 81-87。
- [Ren Jie. "On the Confusion of Ethical Identity and Ethical Thinking in Haruki Murakami's *Norwegian Wood.*" *Contemporary Foreign Literature* 3 (2020): 81-87.]
- 尚必武: "文学世界建构的叙事方式与伦理价值传播",《华中师范大学学报(人文社会科学版)》 6(2020): 95-102。
- [Shang Biwu. "Narrative Ways of Literary World Making and Dissemination of Ethical Values." *Journal of Central China Normal University (Humanities and Social Sciences)* 6 (2020): 95-102.]
- 石雅楠: "论《黑暗的势力》中尼基塔伦理选择的嬗变",《解放军外国语学院学报》5(2021): 153-159。
- [Shi Yanan. "On the Evolution of Nikita's Ethical Selection in *The Power of Darkness.*" *Journal of PLA University of Foreign Languages* 5 (2021): 153-159.]
- Tian Junwu and Duan Yingjie. "Criticism and Evaluation of Nie Zhenzhao's Studies of Ethical Literary Criticism." *Style* 4 (2021): 573-588.
- 威廉•莎士比亚: 《莎士比亚全集 悲剧卷 上》,朱生豪译。南京:译林出版社,1999年。
- [William Shakespeare. *Complete Works of William Shakespeare: Tragedies* (the first volume). translated by Zhu Shenghao. Nanjing: Yilin Publishing House, 1999.]
- 徐彬: "血祭、隔都、奥瑟罗——卡里尔·菲利普斯《血的本质》中欧洲种族主义的政治文化表征", 《外国文学评论》1(2020): 80-93。
- [Xu Bin. "Blood Libel, Ghetto and Othello: The Politico-Cultural Representations of European Racism in Caryl Phillips's *The Nature of Blood.*" *Foreign Literature Review* 1 (2020): 80-93.]
- 徐思园 田俊武: "文学伦理学和数字人文视域下鲍勃·迪伦歌曲中的爱情伦理",《外语教学》 2(2021):108-112。
- [Xu Siyuan and Tian Junwu. "Love ethics of Bob Dylan's songs in the contexts of ethical literary criticism and digital humanities." *Foreign Language Education* 2 (2021):108-112.]
- 徐明莺 李正财: "重构写作主体: 艾丽丝·默多克的叙事伦理",《外语与外语教学》3(2021): 121-129+151。
- [Xu Mingying and Li Zhengcai. "Reconstructing Writing Subject: Iris Murdoch's Narrative Ethics." Foreign Languages and Their Teaching 3 (2021): 121-129+151.]
- Yang Gexin. "Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism by Nie Zhenzhao (review)." *Style* 2 (2017): 270-275.
- 袁小明: "中产阶级家庭伦理构建——路易斯厄德里克小说研究",《外国语文》6(2018): 53-58。
- [Yuan Xiaoming. "Construction of Middle-class Family Ethic: Studies of Louise Erdrich's Novels." Foreign Language and Literature 6 (2018): 53-58.]

# 阿里斯托芬喜剧表演的伦理维度

# The Ethical Dimension of Performance in Aristophanes' Comedies

李顺鹏(Li Shunpeng)

内容摘要:阿里斯托芬讨论了在雅典帝国发展壮大到达顶峰又急转直下的过程中,雅典城邦所面临的严峻考验,这些考验不仅仅是城邦等政治共同体需要面对的,同时也是城邦剧场中的观众需要进行考量的。服装在阿里斯托芬喜剧中作为权力运作的一种手段,对观众的伦理立场产生了影响;作为歌队表演的插曲部分通常表现为一种强制的逻辑,这种逻辑更加直接地要求观众进行伦理选择;最后,阿里斯托芬对退场行动的安排在部分喜剧中具有重要地位,对诗人来说,退场行为不仅仅是喜剧表演的结束,更重要的是,它还传达了包括警示价值和反面道德价值在内的伦理价值。

关键词: 阿里斯托芬; 表演; 服装; 插曲; 退场

作者简介:李顺鹏,华中师范大学文学院博士研究生,主要研究方向为古希腊罗马文学。本文为国家社科基金重大项目"文学伦理学批评的理论资源与对外传播研究"【项目批号: 21&ZD264】的阶段性成果。

Title: The Ethical Dimension of Performance in Aristophanes' Comedies

Abstract: Aristophanes discusses the severe challenges faced by the Athens in the process of the gradual development of the Athens Empire, reaching the peak and then going down sharply, these challenges are not only for the polis and other political communities, but also for the audience in the theater. Costume, as a means of power operation in Aristophanes' comedies, has an impact on the audience's ethical standpoint. Besides, as a performance of the chorus, the interlude usually plays a role as a kind of compulsory logic, which requires the audience to make ethical choice more directly. Finally, Aristophanes' arrangement of the exit plays an important part in his comedies, as for the poet, the behavior of exit not only is the end of comedy performance, but more importantly, it also conveys the ethical value including warning value and negative moral value.

Keywords: Aristophanes; performance; costume; interlude; exit of performers

**Author:** Li Shunpeng is Ph.D. Candidate at the School of Chinese Language and Literature, Central China Normal University (Wuhan 430079, China). His academic

research focuses on Ancient Greek and Roman literature (Email: minoanciv@163. com).

雅典的竞争文化造就了雅典人对"表演"的钟爱,作为与表演联系最为紧密的体裁,戏剧的特殊性就体现在它可以在舞台演员根据剧本进行有限表演的同时传达更多声音,即戏剧可以"向观众引出将普遍智慧或笼统观点与戏剧具体的事件相联系这一难题"(戈尔德希尔,《奥瑞斯提亚》23)。这也正是歌队作为一种"集体之音"和一个戏剧角色向观众传达教诲并暗示观众进行伦理选择的方式,就像酒神大节和列奈亚节上戏剧演出之前进行的游行一样,游行队伍中有一部分是一些男孩,他们的父亲都在战争中失去了生命,因此这些男孩在公共场合的集体出现强调着公民对城邦的义务。"观察意味着施加影响的同时也被现象影响"(戈尔德希尔,《导言》24),如威尔斯所说,阿里斯托芬的喜剧"是以他的观众所处的世界为背景的"(201),阿里斯托芬的喜剧正是凭借这种互动式的表演传达诗人的思想、疑问以及提示观众在家庭、城邦和泛希腊共同体的层面上进行伦理选择。需要说明的是,戏剧在某种程度上本来就是为表演的形式而生的,所以我们可以将戏剧的一切——包括演员对台词文本的声音转化——都称作表演,但本文对戏剧表演的限定侧重于"目光式民主"那样的视觉重点,当然,这离不开作为基础的台词。

# 一、喜剧表演中的服饰、伪装与观众的伦理立场

古希腊剧场中的观众会结合演员所着服装、饰品——在阿里斯托芬喜剧中多体现为伪装——理解喜剧诗人的情节安排,用以伪装的服饰可被看作是一种道具,"它们在现场吸引了观众的注意力,它们进入舞台行动,并吸收着复杂的、有时是冲突的意义"(English 199)。喜剧诗人对服饰和伪装的应用推动了喜剧情节的发展,也推动了剧中人物的权力运作,这种权力运作投射至剧场共同体,对观众的伦理立场产生了影响。

阿里斯托芬喜剧中的服饰控制指涉了一种权力关系,喜剧人物"控制自己和他人的服装,就是证明自己对自己的掌握和对他人的征服"(Compton-Engle, "Control of Costume in Three Plays of Aristophanes" 507)。《阿卡奈人》(Acharnians, 1924)中迪凯奥波利斯因对服装的控制而掌控全局,他在公民大会上剥下了很多人的服装,但没有人脱去他的服装,反倒是他在向欧里庇得斯借一套扮演乞丐的服装的时候,"迪凯奥波利斯的祈使句重复了八次,传达了他专横的语气"(Compton-Engle, Costume in the Comedies of Aristophanes 90),可见他的隐形权力,剧中拉马科斯被剥去盔甲、迪凯奥波利斯看穿波斯人的伪装和识破两个伪装成小猪的女孩都是服饰和权力相关联的例证。《阿卡奈人》直接提到了观众,迪凯奥波利斯在和歌队对驳前希望

能从欧里庇得斯那里借到行头,他说,"观众会认出来,这是我,/但是歌队像呆鸟样地站着,/任我用巧言妙语捉弄他们"(行 440-444)。 对歌队来说,迪凯奥波利斯最初被认为是一个叛徒,因为《阿卡奈人》上演于前 425 年,时值雅典和斯巴达进行的伯罗奔尼撒战争的第一阶段,所以观众会认同阿卡奈人的看法,歌队作为他们的代表对迪凯奥波利斯又追又打。狄凯奥波利斯不得不借用悲剧中的行头来申明自己的严肃性,当他装扮成乞丐后,根据他的看法,歌队将像呆鸟一样分辨不出他来,于是在他对伯罗奔尼撒战争起因进行阐述之后,歌队中的一半人认为他说得有道理,另外一半的歌队成员和他们打了起来。这可被视为服饰起到的一种作用,通过换上乞丐忒勒福斯的装束,一方面迪凯奥波利斯赢得了阿卡奈人的一点怜悯,另一方面,忒勒福斯在神话中是赫拉克勒斯的儿子,因此被认为是希腊人,但他却拒绝参与希腊对特洛伊的战争,因此,狄凯奥波利斯对忒勒福斯服装的借用暗示,一个人完全可以从对城邦敌人的仇恨中脱离出来。服饰的变换蒙蔽了作为观众代表的歌队的眼睛,动摇了他们的伦理立场,也动摇了观众的伦理立场。

但观众始终知道迪凯奥波利斯的伪装,这种伪装"对观众来说必定再明显不过,否则这种幽默的僭越特点就会消失"(赛特林 217),迪凯奥波利斯对服饰的控制暗示他对歌队的权力压制,通过权力压制,迪凯奥波利斯逐渐反转自己的处境,但对观众来说,并不存在演员对观众的权力压制。相反,喜剧观众因为知晓迪凯奥波利斯的换装而同样拥有了对阿卡奈人歌队的权力控制,"操纵服装的行为都对应着操纵者地位的提高和被操纵者地位的降低"(Compton-Engle, "Control of Costume in Three Plays of Aristophanes" 509),观众某种程度上成了迪凯奥波利斯的同谋,这种同谋身份使得观众思考迪凯奥波利斯换上乞丐装束的真正原因及其隐藏意义。所以对《阿卡奈人》的情节和歌队而言,歌队分辨不出的伪装是主角采取的一种迫不得已的、平息他们怒火的手段,而对《阿卡奈人》的观众而言,伪装首先是一种赋予他们权力的方法,通过这种方法及其带来的对歌队的优越感,演员的表演催促他们冷静思考在城邦艰难时期普通公民应有的伦理立场。

《公民大会妇女》中的性别伪装对剧中的妇女们来说,同样是一种出于无奈的选择。观众从一开始就知道女性伪装成男性,但剧中男性对此毫不知情,于是他们只能穿妻子橘红色的外套和波斯式拖鞋,这同样构成了一种权力压制。该剧上演于前392年,当时爱琴海的形势对雅典很有利,波斯对雅典很友好,民主派在罗得斯、萨摩斯、以弗所和密提林掌权,其他多个城邦也都对雅典颇有好感,所以城邦中占多数的贫苦公民支持民主派领袖们收复雅典在伯罗奔尼撒战争期间失去的海外资产。这样一来,剧场里的观众便不可能支持珀拉克萨戈拉的伦理立场。

所以, 剧场里的观众很可能会同情在舞台上受到蒙骗的男性角色, 但

<sup>1</sup> 在引用古代文本时采用行号标注,括号中的数字指古希腊文本中的行号。

随着喜剧表演的进行,观众倾听了由赫勒梅斯转述的妇女口中男性的各种蠢行——暴露国家秘密、借钱不还、互相欺诈、喜好诉讼告密等等,可是观众或许不愿承认男性的诸多缺点,而且《公民大会妇女》中几次偶然事件对男性柔弱的体现一定让喜剧观众怒不可遏。观众的同情和妇女们的控诉形成了对比,于是在性别伪装下,通过对男性缺点的呈现,阿里斯托芬提醒观众避免鲁莽的判断,诗人提供给观众的权力优势不是为了让观众对作为他们同类的男性喜剧角色表示同情和怜悯,而是为了给作为城邦公民的观众一些伦理启示,使他们意识到喜剧和城邦政治的关联,并唤起他们抵抗那些急进政治爱欲受害者肆心的行动。

## 二、作为歌队表演的插曲与观众的伦理选择

尽管古希腊戏剧的合唱歌和插曲涉及的具体动作在戏剧文本上体现得并不明显,但"表演"这一关键词在合唱歌和插曲部分却尤为重要,这一方面是因为,声音产生了歌队这个群体的权威,而且舞蹈的节奏必定涉及歌队的身体,另一方面是因为,歌队在插曲中通常直接对观众说话,述说自己的辛酸经历,表演因素就在于此时歌队和观众的直接互动: 歌队将观众纳入插曲的主要内容中,即"观众被邀请到了通过戏剧情节呈现的sunagōnizesthai[(歌队)参与剧中的行动]中"(卡拉莫 191),因而形成了元戏剧,这样一来,观众显然就构成了喜剧的一部分。有两种类型的插曲与歌队和观众的互动以及观众的伦理选择直接相关:互惠和引起怜悯的策略,强制逻辑或逼迫的策略,以及现实人物的具体诉说的策略。

在第一种类型的插曲中, 歌队称阿里斯托芬为"他", 《骑士》中的歌 队替诗人抱怨说没人欣赏他的喜剧,并表达了他们对观众的期望,即"让你 们的诗人称心如意"(行548)。阿里斯托芬深谙观众的爱欲,《阿卡奈人》 中的歌队以一种互惠的逻辑说,"谁听了这位诗人的忠告,谁就会/变得非 常明智,并在战争中大胜"(行650-655)。这可被视为一种对观众伦理选择 产生影响的行为,其出发点是"观众在评判比赛时反复无常的天性"(Biles 196),观众按喜好随意评判竞赛,这使得老一代的喜剧诗人被人遗忘。歌队 的行为提醒观众要做出合乎城邦道德和公共利益的选择,并暗示,正确的伦 理选择会给观众带来好处。"伦理选择有可能是一种两难选择,但并非伦理 选择一定属于两难选择"(《文学伦理学批评导论》268),如果观众的伦 理选择符合歌队期望,那么他们只是由不喜欢阿里斯托芬的喜剧转向接受阿 里斯托芬喜剧的思想,这是一种一般选择,而非两难选择。《阿卡奈人》中 的歌队以一种悲惨的腔调指出了观众的不义之举,他们一再提及自己遭受城 邦冷落。一方面, "伦理选择按照某种社会要求和道德规范进行选择,按照 做人的道德目标在特定的伦理环境和语境中选择,而且这种选择是在教诲和 学习过程中进行的"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构》

75),正是歌队为观众重现了此种伦理环境并提供了教诲;另一方面,他们 希望能够引起观众的怜悯,和上述互惠逻辑一同,体现了第一种类型的插曲 中歌队表演对观众伦理选择的影响。

第二种类型的插曲大都延续了第一种类型插曲中的互惠逻辑和怜悯计 策,如《云》中的歌队劝说观众判克里昂有罪,城邦会因此重新兴盛起来, 《马蜂》中的歌队向观众诉说年轻人夺去了他们辛苦拼搏来的东西,用以引 起观众的怜悯。但第二种类型的插曲又发展了一种强制性逻辑,这种逻辑以 互惠为基础, 诗人不再单靠劝说和施惠来达到目的, 如果说施惠是因为诗人 深谙雅典人看重金钱的爱欲弊病的话,那么强制性逻辑则是因为诗人洞察到 了雅典人那种自古以来就有的对荣誉的向往和观众对荣誉的曲解。这种强制 性逻辑简言之就是将喜剧的价值和观众的智慧绑定在一起,阿里斯托芬在插 曲中提出了这样一个中心问题:我的喜剧是如此高贵,你们这些智慧的人一 定能看懂、能认同。从阿里斯托芬的角度讲,观众对拥有智慧——一种荣 誉——的向往会使他们仔细思考喜剧思想,并在最后投他一票。

《云》中的歌队称观众是"聪明人"(σοφός),作为诗人的歌队抱怨说,"不 应该失败的我却遭到了失败,因此,我抱怨你们这些聪明人(σοφοίς)"。(行 524-525)《马蜂》中的歌队唱道,"你们没有立即看出其中的高明,真是丢脸。 在聪明人(σοφοῖς)里没有谁认为这是我们诗人的错"。(行1048-1049)《蛙》 中的歌队更是直接赞美观众的智慧, "啊!瞧一瞧,我们面前坐着的无数的 观众,出色的人群,他们有无尽的智慧(σοφίαι)"(行 677-679)。对观众 智慧的直接或间接称赞还出现在一些喜剧的合唱歌中,在这些插曲和合唱歌 中,"阿里斯托芬将他对胜利的渴望和对自己成就的认可等同于他的一种信念, 即观众是聪明的〔……〕这样,他把观众的优点和喜剧的优点并置,如果一 个上升或下降,另外一个也会如此。这是阿里斯托芬精心设计的自夸"(Major 139)。雅典观众甚至整个希腊的观众对荣誉的固执使他们希望被称作是智慧 的,阿里斯托芬抓住了这一心理,从而也就有足够的胆量在剧场里自我赞美。

阿里斯托芬的强制性逻辑既解释宣传了自己的喜剧,又让观众得到了某 种满足,这似乎是一种剧场中的瞬时反应,事实上诗人对自己喜剧及其思想 的解释又在更深层次的地方指引观众。奥里根(D. E. O'Regan)指出阿里斯 托芬这种手段其实是一种盲目的乐观,因为观众还是"更喜欢阿里斯托芬粗 俗对手提供的传统口味"(118),这一论断是根据第一和第二版《云》的剧 本得出的,观众曾因为第一版《云》不够粗俗而抛弃它,不过,正如文学伦 理学所强调的, "要始终关注人在经历伦理选择过程中的道德教诲和学习, 主张通过教诲和学习而做一个有道德的人"(何卫华 聂珍钊 6),这更多地 是阿里斯托芬借歌队与观众的、含有强制性逻辑的互动想要表达的,即观众 永远都需要进行思考和学习,直到作出正确的伦理选择——必要的时候需要 被强制作出特定的伦理选择——和成为更有道德的人。

### 三、退场行动的伦理价值

《云》和《公民大会妇女》的结尾是开放式的,阿里斯托芬通过让斐狄庇得斯适时退出舞台,安排了更大的一场戏剧,这后一场戏剧的舞台便是现实中的雅典城邦,诗人的留白给喜剧观众带去了伦理反思的空间,正如威尔斯所说,"意义并不存在于希腊文本的页面上,而只能在读者或观众的头脑中构建"(207),因此文本的伦理价值常常通过作为表演的退场行动得以表现。根据聂珍钊的观点,"文学的教诲价值和警示价值,是正面道德价值与反面道德价值的总称"(《文学伦理学批评导论》258),阿里斯托芬喜剧中的退场行动所传达的伦理价值主要是警示价值和反面道德价值。

《云》讲述了一个被债务问题困扰的父亲斯特瑞普西阿得斯为逃脱债务 向苏格拉底求学不成之后,让自己的儿子斐狄庇得斯学习诡辩修辞的故事, 这位父亲虽靠言辞摆平了追债人,但也因为言辞深陷伦理混乱的泥潭,故事 结尾,这位父亲意识到了诡辩修辞的危害,烧掉了苏格拉底教授言辞的思想 所。这一结尾看似是一种确定的结尾,即愤怒的父亲烧掉了诡辩修辞的来 源,歌队也称任务完成,但仔细观察就能发现,该结尾暗含一种警示价值。

第一处是第 1475 行斐狄庇得斯的退场,当时他已无心再跟父亲斯特瑞普西阿得斯争论,于是他总结道: "你就在这神经错乱、自言自语吧!"(行 1475)接着便退出舞台。斐狄庇得斯之所以退场,主要是因为他不满足于家庭内部伦理混乱带来的乐趣,故欲以言辞的力量在城邦中找乐子,在这之前,他搅乱了家庭内部的伦理规范,尤其是在他对儿子可以打母亲的论述中,体现了他对乱伦的尝试。阿里斯托芬将喜剧舞台和现实城邦结合了起来,单单是让斐狄庇得斯退场,就足以使观看喜剧的雅典人大惊失色,观众可能会有疑问,为何斐狄庇得斯如此匆忙地离开舞台?对现代读者来说,这充其量只是一个能够被续写的故事,只是一个可有可无的待填补的空缺,但结合雅典那种人们时刻处在表演之中的文化,那种人们"今天坐在剧场里,明天就会坐在公民大会上"(勒维 158)表演的文化,阿里斯托芬的观众会将斐狄庇得斯的表演想象下去,城邦是舞台,其公民则是观众。结合《云》的主题,可以推论,斐狄庇得斯可能会通过修辞术在城邦中蔑视诸神,驳斥法律,并成为僭主式的人物。作为一种让人忧虑的表演,斐狄庇得斯匆匆退场和城邦联系了起来,这便是它的警示价值和反面道德价值。

第二处是第 1510 行的歌队退场,火烧思想所之后,斯特瑞普西阿得斯吩咐仆人追打苏格拉底和凯瑞丰等思想所成员,歌队长说,"把我们领出去吧,今天的任务(κεχόρευται)我们已经很好地(μετρίως)完成了"(行 1510)。歌队长满足地说歌队已经完成了任务,罗念生版译文可被看作是对王焕生版译文的一种补充说明: "我们退去吧,今天的歌舞已经完毕了。" κεχόρευται 一词本义为"跳舞",所以从罗的译文能更清晰地看到,对歌队来说,喜剧

的结束只能算是舞蹈演出的结束,这句突兀的结束语、奇怪的直白"让我们回到谐剧节,它揭开云的面具,并逐步取消戏剧世界,用舞台取而代之"(奥里根 216),这会让观众产生疑问: 歌队惩罚不信神的人这一任务有没有"很好地"(μετρίως)完成? 有些解释认为这一任务完成了,理由是斯特瑞普西阿得斯认识到神的存在并惩罚了苏格拉底之辈,但这种看法没有将斐狄庇得斯考虑进来,斯特瑞普西阿得斯之前不信神是因为要逃避债务,现在信神则是因为斐狄庇得斯无视诸神立下的准则,并随意僭越伦理规范,所以诸神对斯特瑞普西阿得斯来说只是一种便利的工具,用来为欲望服务,因此歌队惩罚不信神的人这一任务并没有"很好地"完成——最多只是思想所的人受到了警示。1924年出版的、现收入洛布古典丛书(The Loeb Classics)的英文版《云》中,这一段被译为"have acted our part","part"一词既可以被理解为歌队表演的舞蹈,又可以被理解为歌队惩罚不虔敬之人这一任务,英文译文将阿里斯托芬的意图显白地表达了出来: 歌队的退场和斐狄庇得斯的退场一样,不只是喜剧表演——歌队舞蹈——的结束,还暗含了关于虔敬的伦理价值。

《公民大会妇女》典型的欢乐结尾可能会给观众一种错觉,这种错觉来源于大多数喜剧的结尾,即喜剧表演结束,到了观众们和喜剧人物一起庆祝的时候了,可这只是节日程式的一部分,而阿里斯托芬向观众的留白真正来自退场歌之前的男青年的退场行动。退场歌之前男青年的退场就是来源于这一规定:"谁想拥抱美人,就必须先去亲热丑女和泼妇"(行 617),两个贪婪丑陋的老妇根据新法律争夺男青年和她们发生关系,这位男青年就是在老妇的拉扯中退出了舞台。这给观众带来了一个难题,妇女们新立的法律是一种正义还是不义?退场歌中欢乐的气氛会让沉溺于节日气氛的观众更加兴奋,可男青年的退场却很沉重。

所以,如果观众在看完喜剧之后还对退场歌之前男青年充满绝望的退场有些印象的话,就会认识到平均主义的伦理——一种抹平差异的伦理——引发的矛盾,妇女们主张施行的平均主义在本质上还是对自然的背叛,因为自然规定人类寻求对等的爱欲对象,美就是美,丑就是丑,同时自然禁止乱伦。而平均主义的伦理以强制手段将美丑等同,还导向了乱伦,因此"这出喜剧变得丑恶,带有些许病态而不是生气"(萨克森豪斯 19)。男青年最终被两个老妇从舞台上拖了下去,紧接着就是诗人安排的歌队退场表演,这使得在退场歌的欢乐气氛中,观众能够想象这位青年即将遭受的痛苦。阿里斯托芬通过对男青年和两位老妇以及歌队的退场安排制造了一种反讽,暗示平均主义的伦理可能在某些方面很具诱惑力,同时也可能具有破坏性。对喜剧观众来说,平均主义伦理留下的不只是关于性行为的想象空间,更关乎它产生的伦理价值,在这里,伦理价值——仍然是警示价值和反面道德价值——就在于随着对平均主义伦理及其法律统治下城邦生活想象的深入,观众会意识到,他们就像喜剧中的男青年一样处于被非自然事物撕扯的危险之中。

虽然阿里斯托芬的喜剧经常反映一些普通城邦民众的思想,并且和城邦的公共生活联系紧密,"但没有证据说明,对他那些早已不那么有倾向性的大部分观众或读者来说,他还有着很大的影响力"(斯托 35),但正是因为多数观众缺少倾向性,阿里斯托芬才在喜剧中采取特色鲜明的表演形式,用以催促观众付诸实践,与此同时,观众在剧场中也因为观看着同一部剧作,经历着同一种感觉而意识到他们是一个整体,尽管这些观众分属不同群体,他们仍然能够凭借喜剧诗人借喜剧传达的伦理价值意识到对邻人、城邦和泛希腊共同体的一种责任感。

#### **Works Cited**

- Aristophanes. *The Acharnians, The Knights, The Clouds, The Wasps*. London: William Heinemann Ltd, 1924.
- Biles, Zachary P. "Aristophanes' Victory Dance: Old Poets in the Parabasis of *Knights*." *Zeitschrift für Papyrologie und Epigraphik* 136 (2001): 195-200.
- Compton-Engle, Gwendolyn. "Control of Costume in Three Plays of Aristophanes." *The American Journal of Philology* 4 (2003): 507-535.
- —. Costume in the Comedies of Aristophanes. New York: Cambridge UP, 2015.
- English, Mary C. "Reconstructing Aristophanic Performance: Stage Properties in *Acharnians*." *The Classical World* 3 (2007): 199-227.
- Major, Wilfred E. "Aristophanes and 'Alazoneia': Laughing at the Parabasis of the *Clouds*." *The Classical World* 2 (2006): 131-144.
- Wiles, David. Greek Theatre Performance: An Introduction. New York: Cambridge UP, 2000.
- 阿里斯托芬:《古希腊悲剧喜剧全集》(卷六),张竹明 王焕生译。南京:译林出版社,2007年。
- [Aristophanes. Complete Works of Ancient Greek Tragedies and Comedies vol. 6, translated by Zhang Zhuming and Wang Huansheng. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2007.]
- 阿里斯托芬:《古希腊悲剧喜剧全集》(卷七),张竹明 王焕生译。南京:译林出版社,2007年。
- [Aristophanes. Complete Works of Ancient Greek Tragedies and Comedies vol.7, translated by Zhang Zhuming and Wang Huansheng. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2007.]
- 奥里根:《雅典谐剧与逻各斯:〈云〉中的修辞、谐剧性与语言暴力》,黄薇薇译。北京:华夏出版社,2010年。
- [O'Regan. *Rhetoric Comedy and the Violence of Language in Aristophanes' Clouds*, translated by Huang Weiwei. Beijing: Huaxia Publishing House, 2010.]
- 戈德希尔:《奥瑞斯提亚》,颜荻译。北京:生活·读书·新知三联书店,2018年。
- [Goldhill. Oresteia, translated by Yan Di. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 2018.]
- ——: "导言",李向利译。《表演文化与雅典民主政制》,戈尔德希尔 奥斯本编。北京:华 夏出版社,2014年。

- [—. "Introduction." translated by Li Xiangli. *Performance Culture and Athenian Democracy*, edited by Goldhill and Osborne. Beijing: Huaxia Publishing House, 2014. 1-35.]
- 何卫华 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评与族裔文学: 聂珍钊教授访谈录",《外国语文研究》1(2020): 1-12。
- [He Weihua and Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism and Ethnic Literature: An Interview with Professor Nie Zhenzhao." Foreign Language and Literature Research 1 (2020): 1-12.]
- 卡拉莫: "希腊肃剧中歌队声音的表演层面", 苏岩 马勇译。《表演文化与雅典民主政制》, 戈尔德希尔 奥斯本编。北京: 华夏出版社, 2014 年。
- [Calame. "The Performance of the Chorus' Voice in Greek Tragedies." Translated by Su Yan and Ma Yong. *Performance Culture and Athenian Democracy*, edited by Goldhill and Osborne. Beijing: Huaxia Publishing House, 2014. 160-195.]
- 勒维:《古希腊喜剧艺术》,傅正明译。北京:北京大学出版社,1988年。
- [Lever, Katherine. The Art of Greek Comedy, translated by Fu Zhengming. Beijing: Peking UP, 1988.]
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10 (2020): 71-92 + 205-206。
- [—. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." *China Social Sciences* 10 (2020): 71-92+205-206.]
- 萨克森豪斯:《惧怕差异——古希腊思想中政治科学的诞生》,曹聪译。北京:华夏出版社, 2010年。
- [Saxonhouse. Fear of Diversity: The Birth of Political Science in Ancient Greek Thought, translated by Cao Cong. Beijing: Huaxia Publishing House, 2010.]
- 赛特林: "《公民大会妇女》中的乌托邦表演",马勇译。《表演文化与雅典民主政制》,戈 尔德希尔 奥斯本编。北京: 华夏出版社,2014年: 213-252。
- [Zeitlin. "Utopian Performance in the *Ecclesiazusae*." Translated by Ma Yong. *Performance Culture* and *Athenian Democracy*, edited by Goldhill and Osborne. Beijing: Huaxia Publishing House, 2014. 213-252.]
- 斯托: "阿里斯托芬对公众意见的影响", 杜佳译。《雅典民主的谐剧》, 刘小枫 陈少明编。 北京: 华夏出版社, 2008 年: 25-35。
- [Stow. "Aristophanes' Influence upon Public Opinion." Translated by Du Jia. *The Comedy of Athenian Democracy*, edited by Liu Xiaofeng and Chen Shaoming. Beijing: Huaxia Publishing House, 2008. 25-35.]

"女扮男装"与伦理选择:《第十二夜》中薇奥拉的形象分析

# "Woman Disguised as a Man" and Ethical Choices: An Analysis of Viola's Image in the *Twelfth Night*

# 张 秀 (Zhang Xiu)

内容摘要:《第十二夜》通过薇奥拉的女扮男装聚焦理性认知、理性选择与身份建构问题。薇奥拉通过女扮男装建构新的性别与社会伦理身份,以便融入伊利里亚社会。然而,女扮男装的身份的不确定性也导致伦理的混乱与冲突,使薇奥拉常常陷入伦理困境之中。薇奥拉的伪装以及面对伦理困境做出的选择,皆影响着周围人的视角,促使奥西诺公爵与奥利维娅等人从排他性的孤立状态中解放出来。他们在各自的选择过程中不断加深对自我与他人的认知,逐渐调节着现实世界与欲望世界之间的矛盾。矛盾解决的同时,薇奥拉等人的伦理身份获得重构,伴随着身份的确认和地位的改变,伊利里亚社会的伦理秩序也得以重新确立,良性发展的社会逐渐形成。

关键词:《第十二夜》; 薇奥拉; 女扮男装; 身份建构; 伦理选择 作者简介: 张秀, 浙江大学外国语学院博士研究生, 主要研究领域为文学伦理学批评与英美文学。本文受 2022 年国家建设高水平大学公派研究生项目国家留学基金资助, 系国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号: 19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** "Woman Disguised as a Man" and Ethical Choices: An Analysis of Viola's Image in the *Twelfth Night* 

Abstract: Twelfth Night focuses on rational cognition, rational choices and identity construction through Viola's disguising as a man. Viola constructs a new gender and social ethical identity by disguising as a man, so as to integrate into the society of Illyria. However, the uncertainty of Viola's disguised identity also leads to ethical confusions and conflicts, which makes Viola often fall into ethical predicaments. Viola's disguise and choices in the face of ethical dilemmas affect the perspectives of people around her, and also promote Duke Orsino and Olivia to liberate themselves from the exclusive isolation. In the process of choosing, they continue to deepen their understanding of themselves and others, and gradually adjust the contradiction between the real world and the desire world. At the same time, the

ethical identity of Viola and others was reconstructed. With the confirmation of identity and the change of status, the ethical order of Illyria was reestablished, and a benign development society has gradually taken shape.

**Keywords:** Twelfth Night; Viola; woman disguised as a man; identity construction; ethical choices

Author: Zhang Xiu, is Ph.D. Candidate in the School of International Studies at Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310030, China). Her academic research focuses on Ethical Literary Criticism as well as English and American literature (Email: 12005010@zju.edu.cn).

16世纪末,伦敦的舞台上开始上演莎士比亚的新型喜剧,即浪漫喜剧。 这种喜剧的浪漫性不仅在于它不受古典戏剧创作传统的约束,还在于用丰富 的想象力建构一种逃离严肃乏味、邪恶肮脏的现实生活的方式。对于莎士比 亚的喜剧创作天赋,约翰逊博士给予了高度评价,认为"他的悲剧似乎依赖 于技巧,喜剧则出自于本能"(Johnson 19)。莎士比亚的喜剧创作天赋,本 质在于他能够随心所欲地在其作品中将浪漫主义与现实主义因素相结合。莎 士比亚的浪漫喜剧通常也被称作"事件喜剧"或"错位身份喜剧",主要在 于戏剧情节往往是由人物错置的伦理身份所驱动,其中最常见的是女性角色 的女扮男装。作为莎士比亚最成熟的浪漫喜剧,《第十二夜》就是"错位身 份喜剧"的典范之作。女扮男装是贯穿全剧的关键喜剧元素,也是创作者将 浪漫主义与现实主义相融合的重要手段。

薇奥拉的伪装是《第十二夜》中的"中心骗局"(Porter 193),她女扮 男装的选择不仅使自己陷入伦理困境之中,而且引起了伊利里亚社会伦理秩 序的混乱,带来了意想不到的冲突与矛盾。评论家们从薇奥拉女扮男装入手, 对女性的社会地位、性别焦虑、身份的流动性等主题展开了研究,尽管批评 家们都关注到了薇奥拉女扮男装在戏剧情节中的重要作用,但对薇奥拉女扮 男装的伦理选择的成因以及伦理价值并未深入挖掘。本文从薇奥拉女扮男装 的动机分析入手,对薇奥拉女扮男装引起的伦理困境及其选择展开探讨,并 且对薇奥拉女扮男装促进人物不断加深对自我与他人的认知,以及在社会共 同体形塑过程中彰显的伦理价值进行深入解读,以此从一个侧面来观照《第 十二夜》的伦理教诲价值。

## 一、薇奥拉女扮男装的身份建构

文艺复兴时期,人们逐渐意识到,人类身份的形成是一个可操作的、巧 妙的过程。1人的社会身份是建构的结果,而非与生俱来的。女扮男装正是薇

See Stephen Greenblatt, Renaissance Self-Fashioning-From More to Shakespeare, London: Chicago UP, 1980: 2.

奥拉为建构新的伦理身份所做出的努力与尝试。薇奥拉历经海难,流落异乡,孪生兄长生死不明,因此失去了男性家长的保护。为了在陌生的伊利里亚社会生存下去,薇奥拉亟需为自己建构一个新的伦理身份。

在薇奥拉的理想中, 她希望做奥利维娅的侍女。关于薇奥拉做奥利维娅 侍女的意愿,须回到文艺复兴这个特殊的伦理环境中,从该时期的社会传统 与性别意识形态等方面进行分析和理解。文艺复兴时期的英国社会,父权制 观念依旧根深蒂固。在传统道德里,女性的活动范围仅限于家中,"贞洁、 沉默、顺从"等被视作理想女性应当具备的美德。琼斯这样解释文艺复兴时 期的性别意识形态: "在人文主义和资产阶级家庭理论的论述中, 合乎规范 的女性是一种'缺席',从法律上讲,她在父亲和丈夫的名义和权威下隐 匿不见;作为女儿和妻子,她被限制在家庭领域里,沉默而无形"(Jones 74)。保持沉默且不在家以外的地方抛头露面,是传统道德中的理想女性的 行为准则。如果走出家门,进入男性的生活空间,女性将会暴露在"视觉" 和"言语"的双重危险中。如果做伯爵小姐奥利维娅的侍女,这个身份并不 需要薇奥拉改变性别。更重要的是,作为贵族小姐的贴身侍女,薇奥拉不用 跟外界打交道,因而既不会违背女性应遵循的社会传统和伦理道德,也不会 暴露其阶级出身和社会地位等真实身份。因此,对于失去兄长又身处他乡的 薇奥拉来说,做同样失去父兄的奥利维娅的侍女是其最好的选择。诚如薇奥 拉所言, "要是我能够侍候这位小姐,就可以在时机成熟之前隐瞒我的身份 了"(1.2.38-40)1。然而,奥利维娅要为逝世的哥哥哀悼七年,过着与世 隔绝的生活,并拒绝外界的一切请求,甚至连"公爵的请求她也是拒绝的" (1.2.43)。在意识到做奥利维娅侍女的请求必然会遭到拒绝后,薇奥拉随即 放弃了建构侍女的伦理身份的意图。

为了构建一个能够在伊利里亚社会中生活下去的新身份,薇奥拉将目光转向公爵,决心做他的侍从。薇奥拉请求船长"你得帮助我假扮起来" (1.2.50),试图通过女扮男装建构新的伦理身份。薇奥拉建构新的伦理身份就是通过衣着男性的服装建构女扮男装的性别身份,这也意味着她对其本来的女性身份的解构。在文艺复兴时期,服装作为一个高度规范的符号系统,"给予人们一个独特的外在标志,用来区分性别,当一个人穿着异性的服装,就是隐藏其真实的性别,构建异性的性别身份"(Howard 422)。男性的服装是男性的社会性别身份的符号。通过女扮男装,薇奥拉完成了男性身份的建构,继而借助新的性别身份成为公爵的侍从。女扮男装对薇奥拉意义重大。一方面,流落异域他乡的薇奥拉为自己在男性社会里找到了"心理避难所"(431),这是她为了保护自己做出的伦理选择。另一方面,建构

<sup>1</sup> 本文所引该剧的汉译均采用朱生豪译:《莎士比亚喜剧集》(南京:译林出版社,2012年)。 引文后注明的幕次、场次、行次以 Keir Elam, ed., *Twelfth Night or What You Will* (London: Bloomsbury Arden Shakespeare, 2008) 为据。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

公爵侍从的伦理身份有利于她更好地融入伊利里亚社会。

尽管薇奥拉通过女扮男装做了公爵的侍从,建构了能够保证自己在伊利 里亚生活下去的伦理身份,但是女扮男装的身份并不是她的真实身份,也不符 合她的女性心理,因此内心也对其男性身份的道德合理性表示怀疑。女扮男装 是薇奥拉迫不得已做出的身份选择,在男性服装的伪装之下,是她对其不稳定 的社会性别身份的担忧与厌恶。薇奥拉将女扮男装之下的自己称作"可怜的 怪物"(2.2.34),因为女扮男装使其变成了双重性别的混合体。文艺复兴时 期,同性恋、雌雄同体以及易装的女性与"怪物"的概念相联系。加伯指出, 易装的女性是"两种性别身份的怪物,其一半是女人,一半是男人"(qtd. in Garber 34)。"可怜的怪物"的称呼揭示了薇奥拉处于身体与精神不协调的间 隙中, 受男女两性原则制约的束缚。薇奥拉质疑自己女扮男装的道德合理性, 认为自己的伪装是不道德的。"伪装,我认为你是邪恶的"(2.2.27),薇奥 拉用顿呼的方式,间接地将自己的易装行为与《创世纪》中撒旦伪装成蛇相类 比, 道出了其女扮男装的道德缺陷。尽管薇奥拉认识到自己的女扮男装违反了 自然与社会的性别规范,但于她而言,女扮男装并非是为了反抗或摆脱父权制 的压迫、挑战父权制的权威、争取更多的社会权利,而是凭借这种越轨的方式 来建构一个在伊利里亚生活下去的新的伦理身份,为自己在新的社会环境中寻 找一个生存空间。因此, 薇奥拉继续选择女扮男装。

# 二、伦理困境与薇奥拉的伦理选择

女扮男装促使薇奥拉建构了在伊利里亚社会生活下去的伦理身份, 即奥 西诺公爵的侍从,但女扮男装带来的身份的不确定性也导致了伦理的混乱与冲 突,使薇奥拉陷入伦理困境之中。女扮男装不只是性别符号的简单改变,而是 "戏剧身份的替代、叠加或变形,一个角色同时扮演两个角色"(Bradbrook 160)。女扮男装给了薇奥拉女性与男性的双重性别身份,也使她拥有了作为 奥西诺公爵的侍从与作为西巴斯辛妹妹的双重伦理身份。伦理身份是道德行为 及道德规范的前提,并对道德行为主体产生约束。1因此,伦理身份的不确定 性必然会导致伦理的混乱,致使薇奥拉陷入伦理困境之中。伦理困境指文学文 本中由于伦理混乱而给人物带来的难以解决的矛盾与冲突。<sup>2</sup>在《第十二夜》 中,薇奥拉先后陷入了多重伦理困境,面临着无法解决的伦理选择难题,如是 否代表公爵向奥利维娅求爱,如何应对奥利维娅爱上自己的表白,如何化解公 爵将自己当成情敌欲杀之的危机等。

在成为奥西诺公爵的近侍后, 薇奥拉自己爱上了公爵, 但却被公爵委以 重任,代其向奥丽维娅求爱。因此,侍从的职责与对公爵的爱恋使得薇奥拉 陷入了是否代公爵向奥利维娅求爱的伦理困境之中。一方面,薇奥拉表面上

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊, 《文学伦理学批评导论》, 北京: 北京大学出版社, 2014年, 第 264页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 聂珍钊, 《文学伦理学批评导论》, 北京: 北京大学出版社, 2014年, 第258页。

的身份是公爵的男性侍从,但实质却是女儿身,并且已经爱上了公爵,她对 公爵的爱慕从她后来向公爵的间接表白中可以看出。如其所言: "我的父亲 有一个女儿,她爱上了一个男人,正像假如我是个女人,也许会爱上殿下您 一样"(2.4.234)。在男性身份的伪装以及侍从身份的束缚下,薇奥拉只能 通过言语表露其真挚的情感。事实上,在薇奥拉的情感认知中,她是公爵的 恋人,并且誓必要"做他的夫人"(1.4.42)。选择为公爵向奥丽维娅求爱, 就意味着薇奥拉要违背自己心理和道德上的公爵恋人的伦理身份,背叛自己 对公爵的爱情。另一方面,就其女扮男装所建构的新的伦理身份而言,薇奥 拉是公爵信任的侍从, 侍从的伦理身份要求她必须"承担身份所赋予的责任 与义务"(聂珍钊 263)。因此,在代表公爵向奥丽维娅求爱的命令前,她 必然面临艰难的选择。在忠于爱情与履行责任的矛盾与冲突中,薇奥拉的道 德战胜了情感,最终做出了承担责任的伦理选择。她向公爵保证:"我愿意 尽力去向您的爱人求婚"(1.4.40-41)。薇奥拉做出这种选择主要基于两点: 第一,她需要履行侍从的职责来进一步确立和巩固自己刚刚建立的社会伦理 身份。第二,出于对公爵的真挚爱情,薇奥拉愿意将自己的情感暂时放在一边, 置公爵的情感于首要的位置。在理智与情感的抉择中, 薇奥拉没有被自己的 情感与私欲所左右, 也没有在困难面前退缩, 而是锲而不舍地的履行作为爱 情使者的责任和义务。

在履行侍从职责代表公爵向奥利维娅求爱的过程中,薇奥拉不仅未能让奥利维娅爱上公爵,接受公爵的爱情,反而致使她阴差阳错地爱上了女扮男装的自己,由此进一步让自己陷入如何应对奥利维娅对自己的爱情表白的伦理困境之中。奥利维娅对西萨里奥(即薇奥拉)一见钟情,观众与读者皆心知肚明奥利维娅爱上的这个仆从不是男性,而是一位妙龄女郎。在薇奥拉代公爵第一次求爱时,奥利维娅假借归还戒指向薇奥拉表露爱意。虽然奥西诺并未赠送戒指给奥利维娅,但正是通过这种方式,奥利维娅不仅表明了对公爵爱情的拒绝,也暗示了对西萨里奥的爱恋。随后,在薇奥拉代公爵第二次求爱时,奥利维娅直截了当地向她表露爱情。面对奥利维娅接连几次的暗示与表白,一方面,薇奥拉深知作为女性,她不可能接受另一位女性的爱情,奥利维娅付出的情感注定是徒劳的。薇奥拉为自己女扮男装给奥利维娅带来的理智与情感上的混乱而内疚,"因为我是个女人,可怜的奥利维娅也要白费无数的叹息了"(2.2.38-39)。另一方面,由于需要凭借公爵侍从的伦理身份在伊利里亚社会生活下去,薇奥拉又无法直接告诉奥利维娅真相。因此,薇奥拉再次陷入了伦理困境之中。

为了解决奥利维娅的表白所带来的伦理困境,薇奥拉试图通过言语来恢复自己真实的伦理身份,以此拒绝奥利维娅对自己的爱情。在第二次履行求爱职责的过程中,当奥利维娅直截了当地向薇奥拉表白之后,后者试图在与前者的话语交际中解构自己作为侍从的伦理身份,恢复本来的身份。

奥利维娅:请你告诉我你以为我这人怎样?

薇奥拉: 我以为你以为你不是你自己。

奥利维娅:要是我以为这样,我以为你也是这样。

薇奥拉: 你猜想得不错, 我不是我自己。

奥利维娅: 我希望你是我所希望于你的那种人。

薇奥拉: 那是不是比现在的我要好些,小姐? 我希望好一些,因为现在我不过是你的弄人。(3.1.136-142)

在双方的言语交际中,当奥利维娅想要确认西萨里奥对自己是否抱有同 样的情感,并明确彼此在这份情感中的伦理身份时,薇奥拉暗示奥利维娅不 要忘记自己高贵的出身,爱上一个比自己地位低还是同样性别的人。面对奥 利维娅对其出身高贵的猜测,薇奥拉用"我不是我自己"做出了回应,在此 语境中她的话语主体的身份不再是公爵的侍从——西萨里奥,而是作为女性 的伦理身份——薇奥拉。薇奥拉直白的话语意在表明,她现有的伦理身份, 既包括男性的性别身份也包括侍从的社会身份,皆是她所扮演的。在此语境 中, 薇奥拉的女扮男装引起的伦理身份的改变使说话者与受话者之间的认知 环境不同,当薇奥拉试图用话语建构自己的性别等伦理身份时,奥利维娅因 被薇奥拉的外表所惑,未能理解其话语的深层所指。其原因在于"人类认知 往往力求以最小的心理投入,获取最大的认知效果。因此理解话语时听话人 只会关注、处理那些具有足够关联性的话语,而且倾向于在与这些话语最大 限度的关联的语境中对其进行处理,并构建与这些话语有足够关联的心理表 征"(何自然 冉永平104)。奥利维娅只根据薇奥拉的话语及其男性的外表 来解读出她出身高贵的表层涵义,却并未体悟出薇奥拉对自己身为女性身份 的隐晦提及,反而被欲望和幻想驱使着进一步解构薇奥拉的伦理身份。奥利 维娅将薇奥拉视作自我中心的延伸、把薇奥拉成为自己理想中的丈夫的渴望 投射到对其伦理身份的构建中。因此,奥利维娅爱上女扮男装的薇奥拉的伦 理困境依然存在。受侍从的伦理身份的限制,薇奥拉无法直抒胸臆,只能等 待合适的时机解决该困境。

最后,面对公爵将自己视作情敌欲杀之,薇奥拉陷入了保全自己还是为爱牺牲的伦理困境之中。该伦理困境是因西巴斯辛的出现导致的新的伦理混乱。西巴斯辛是薇奥拉的同胞兄长,女扮男装后的薇奥拉与西巴斯辛如同镜中之像、水中之影。因此,西巴斯辛的出现使得薇奥拉、公爵以及奥利维娅三者间的爱恋关系变得更加错综复杂。奥丽维娅误把西巴斯辛当作薇奥拉,欲与之成婚。虽薇奥拉对此一无所知,却引起了公爵的嫉恨,招致了杀身之祸。面对生与死的困境与选择,薇奥拉甘愿为爱牺牲。当戏剧到达高潮,并即将朝着悲剧发展时,西巴斯辛的适时出现让薇奥拉女性身份的真相浮出水

面,从而解构了薇奥拉女扮男装的身份。薇奥拉女扮男装所引起的所有的伦理困境与混乱终于得以化解,戏剧以皆大欢喜的结局收尾。喜剧的结局是通过艺术家的神来之笔实现的,"在莎士比亚的喜剧中,我们观众应该意识到,如果没有艺术家的帮助,这出戏就不会圆满结束。没有艺术家的介入,没有外部力量,幸福永远不会实现"(Bache 56-58)。

### 三、薇奥拉的女扮男装与伦理秩序重构

薇奥拉的女扮男装不仅未对父权制度和性别等级体系造成威胁,反而促进了伦理秩序的重构,加速了社会的和谐与良性发展。薇奥拉的女扮男装促使公爵与奥利维娅等人不断加深对自我与他人的认知,随着认知的不断加深,逐渐摆脱精神上的"伪装",从自恋和幻想的虚幻世界中苏醒,进入现实世界。此外,薇奥拉的女扮男装身份的解构也促进了身份的重构,最终众人重新回归到性别意识形态和传统文化所认可的支配地位或从属地位,伴随着身份的重构和地位的改变,伊利里亚社会的伦理秩序也得以重新确立,良性发展的社会逐渐形成。

薇奥拉凭借女扮男装的伪装,发挥着中间人的作用,调节着现实世界与 公爵及奥利维娅等人的欲望世界之间的矛盾,促使他们不断加深对自我与他 人的认知,随着认知的不断加深,最终回归现实。弗莱总结了现实世界与欲 望世界的基础以及两者之间不可避免的冲突: "我们生活的一部分是在一个 我们称之为正常的清醒的世界中度过的,另一部分是在一个根据自己的欲望 创造的梦境中度过的。莎士比亚赋予两个世界同等的想象力,使它们彼此对 立,并使两个世界虚实相衬"(Frye 72-73)。薇奥拉女扮男装的外在伪装与 公爵以及奥利维娅的内在伪装形成了鲜明对比: 前者处于清醒而理智的现实 世界;后者沉溺于虚幻而智昏的欲望世界。薇奥拉凭借女扮男装的伪装,将 "救赎之爱、自我认知甚至身份本身引入伊利里亚"(89),促使奥西诺公 爵与奥利维娅等人不断地加深对自我与他人的认知,并逐渐走出欲望世界。 伪装是引导角色自我认知的有效工具,因为这些喜剧技巧不仅仅是发展情节 的手段,而且是实验的跳板,让男人和女人从自我错觉中解脱出来,实现自 我醒悟。」正是薇奥拉在爱情中不计得失,无私奉献的付出让奥西诺公爵体悟 到爱情的无私性与补偿性,从自我膨胀的单恋中抽离出来。也正是基于薇奥 拉对于生命短暂、时间宝贵、爱情美好等方面的理性阐释使奥利维娅从沉沦 于丧亲的孤立状态中醒悟过来。约翰•劳里认为,薇奥拉外在伪装的作用在 于通过使奥利维娅与奥西诺公爵暴露其思想上的伪装来促使他们摆脱"愚蠢 的自我迷惑"(Lawry 94)。薇奥拉外在的伪装以及内在的无私奉献的真挚 情感解开了"奥利维娅和奥西诺自欺欺人所编织的错误之网" (Porter 197-198),并在不知不觉中给他们传达了理性认知和选择的重要性。

<sup>1</sup> See Newman Karen, Shakespeare's Rhetoric of Comic Character, New York: Menthuen, 1985: 118.

薇奥拉的女扮男装促使她自身与奥利维娅以及公爵等人的身份重构,随着身份的重构和社会地位的改变,伊利里亚社会的伦理秩序也得以重新确立。女扮男装的薇奥拉凭借其欺骗性的外表以及由此带来的幻觉,创造出一种模棱两可的氛围,使与之相关的人在陷入伦理混乱的同时参与到身份的建构与社会秩序的重构中。弗莱将莎士比亚的喜剧结构描述为一种新的社会认同的驱动力和新社会的结晶。他认为: "伪装的女主人公的活动有助于促成一个新社会的诞生和社会新秩序的建立" (Frye 37)。通过女扮男装的薇奥拉,奥利维娅在未见到西巴斯辛时就已经爱上了他,当所有的冲突与混乱随着西巴斯辛的出现而烟消云散后,奥丽维娅欣然与西巴斯辛结为了眷属,并最终确认了自己在爱情与婚姻中的身份。薇奥拉通过女扮男装建构侍从身份接近公爵,获得了公爵的信任与宠爱,而公爵也逐渐认识到了隐藏在薇奥拉身上的美好品质并感受到了她真挚的情感。最终,薇奥拉也如愿以偿地拥有了奥西诺公爵的爱情,并获得了在伊利里亚永久生活的伦理身份——公爵夫人,公爵也得以确立在爱情和婚姻中的伦理身份。伦理身份的建立与确认意味着伦理秩序的建立与巩固,和谐共生的新社会正逐渐形成。

女扮男装的伪装不仅是塑造戏剧张力的重要手段,而且会造成伪装中的人物伦理身份的改变。通过欺骗性的外表营造一种扑朔迷离的伦理环境,从而影响所有相关人员的视角,并对其社会共同体产生深远的影响。通过薇奥拉女扮男装的身份的改变,莎士比亚巧妙地将读者与观众的注意力吸引到情感与欲望、外表上的伪装与精神上的伪装以及身份的建构与解构等诸多问题上,引发我们的审视与思考。

#### 结语

喜剧作为一门文学艺术,不仅是为了娱乐,且以矛盾冲突、幽默讽刺、突转反复等手法揭示现实,还原生活的本来面目,"为人类提供从伦理角度认识社会和生活的道德范例,为人类的物质生活和精神生活提供道德指引,为人类的自我完善提供道德经验"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语》17)。《第十二夜》正是通过女扮男装的伪装引起对身份、认知以及情感等问题的关注与思考,寓教于乐。一方面,本剧旨在通过外表上的伪装来揭露人们精神上的自我欺骗与"伪装",从而强调自我认知与理性选择的重要性;另一方面,它意在阐明社会秩序的建立与巩固得益于社会个体身份的建构与确认,源于人类社会共同体之中和谐共生的伦理友爱。自恋与孤立无法构筑一个和谐发展的社会,只会造成人与人之间的间隙与隔绝。

本剧中的女主角薇奥拉不像传统的喜剧结构中那样复归到原先的装束, 而是到剧终都保留着男性的装束,且最后一幕也未采取大部分喜剧用舞蹈和 婚礼来庆祝个人和社会实现圆满和谐的结尾方式。但正是通过这种开放的结 局,莎士比亚给予我们对于喜剧的无限遐思。每个人在这个宇宙中都有自己 的位置,有权展现自己的才能,表达自己的情感,最大限度地实现自我价值。莎士比亚通过小丑费斯特的谢幕曲,讲述从幼年到老年的人生之旅,将现实世界引入浪漫的伊利里亚,使浪漫与现实相互交融。喜剧以"愿诸君欢喜笑融融"(5.5.401)作结,向读者和观众敞开怀抱,让观众参与到对喜剧的构建中,对自我的定义中,对人类幸福的期盼中。

#### **Works Cited**

Bache, William B. "Levels of Perception in *Twelfth Night.*" Ball State University Forum 5 (1964): 56-58

Bradbrook, M.C. "Shakespeare and the Use of Disguise in Elizabethan Drama." *Essays in Criticism* 2 (1952): 159-168.

Frye, Northrop. A Natural Perspective: The Development of Shakespearean Comedy and Romance. New York: Columbia UP, 1965.

Garber, Marjorie. Vested Interests: Cross-Dressing & Cultural Anxiety. New York: Routledge, 1992.

Greenblatt, Stephen. Renaissance Self-Fashioning: From More to Shakespeare. Chicago: Chicago UP, 1980.

何自然 冉永平: "关联理论——认知语用学基础", 《现代外语》3(1998): 92-107。

[He Ziran and Ran Yongping. "A Review of Relevance Theory—the Essentials of Cognitive Pragmatics." *Modern Foreign Languages* 3 (1998): 92-107.]

Howard, Jean K. "Cross-dressing, The Theatre, and Gender Struggle in Early Modern England." Shakespeare Quarterly 4 (1988): 418-440.

Jones, Ann Rosalind. "Surprising Fame: Renaissance Gender Ideologies and Women's Lyric." *The Poetics of Gender* (1986): 74-95.

Johnson, Samuel. Johnson on Shakespeare, edited by H. Woudhuysen. London: Penguin, 1989.

Lawry, Jon S. "Twelfth Night and 'Salt Waves Fresh in Love". Shakespeare Studies 6 (1970), 89-108.

Newman, Karen. Shakespeare's Rhetoric of Comic Character. New York: Menthuen, 1985.

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

——: "文学伦理学批评: 基本理论与术语", 《外国文学研究》1(2010): 12-22。

[—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2010): 12-22.]

Porter Williams, J. "Mistakes in *Twelfth Night* and Their Resolution: a Study in Some Relationships of Plot and Theme." *PMLA* 3 (1961): 193-199.

Shakespeare, William. *Twelfth Night or What You Will*. London: Bloomsbury Arden Shakespeare, 2008. 威廉•莎士比亚: 《莎士比亚喜剧集》,朱生豪译。南京: 译林出版社, 2012 年。

[Shakespeare, William. A Collection of Comedies by William Shakespeare, translated by Zhu Shenghao. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2012.]

# 济慈《夜莺颂》的听觉叙事与伦理价值

# Auditory Narrative and Ethical Value of Keats's "Ode to a Nightingale"

刘海英 (Liu Haiying)

内容摘要:济慈在《夜莺颂》中用"偶听""幻听""灵听"等倾听方式构成特殊的听觉叙事结构,反映了济慈在特定伦理困境中做出的伦理选择。济慈在《夜莺颂》末尾两行诗句使用疑问句式表达其伦理思想,呈现出"因听而悟"的听觉反应第三重境界,表现其"客体感受力"的诗学理念。"重听"经典之作《夜莺颂》,有利于我们深入挖掘济慈诗歌的伦理价值,改善长久以来忽视听觉的不良习惯,恢复倾听自然界声音的本能。

关键词:济慈;《夜莺颂》;听觉叙事;伦理价值;斯芬克斯因子

作者简介:刘海英,中国农业大学人文与发展学院外语系副教授,主要研究方向为英语浪漫主义文学。本文受到"中央高校基本科研业务费专项资金资助",系中国农业大学重大社科成果培育项目"英国浪漫主义诗人济慈形象研究"【项目批号:2022TC071】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Auditory Narrative and Ethical Value of Keats's "Ode to a Nightingale"

Abstract: Keats constructs the special narrative structure of "Ode to a Nightingale" with diverse auditory methods such as overhearing, auditory hallucination and weird hearing, indicating Keats's ethical choice when faced with the specific ethical predicament. Keats uses a rhetorical question in the last two lines of the "Ode" to represent his ethical thought, which reflects the third realm of auditory response with sudden enlightenment, and displays his poetic idea of "negative capability". "Re-listening" to the canonical "Ode" is of benefit for us to explore the ethical value of the "Ode", to revise human being's habitual neglect of auditory sense, and to resume the intuition of hearing the natural voices.

**Keywords:** Keats; "Ode to a Nightingale"; auditory narrative; ethical value; Sphinx factor

**Author: Liu Haiying** is Associate Professor at the Department of Foreign Languages, College of Humanities and Development Studies, China Agricultural University (Beijing 100083, China). Her academic research focuses on English Romantic literature (Email: ying1126@163.com).

约翰·济兹(John Keats, 1795-1821)诗歌的核心特征是"包罗万象的 感觉主义"(勃兰兑斯 154),其经典名作《夜莺颂》自1820年出版以来,相 关研究成果颇为丰富。《夜莺颂》究竟只呈现"美"的感觉,还是表达出对 "真"的"悟",其末尾两行诗句意味着诗人"获得还是丧失了感受能力" (O'Rourke 2),是济慈颂诗批评史上的一个核心问题。有学者认为,《夜莺 颂》只"涉及美, 其内容与真理无关"(Vendler 78)。也有学者指出, 尽管 《夜莺颂》末尾两行"没有给出任何结论"(Sheats 92),但是济慈以其独 特的诗歌风格实现了颂诗的功能,表明人类内心的深切渴望。双方争论的焦 点在于《夜莺颂》是否兼具审美价值和伦理价值。实际上,"文学的教诲作 用是文学的基本功能,教诲的实现过程就是文学的审美过程。教诲也是文学 审美的结果"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值" 9)。济慈不是唯美主义者,而是具有深刻伦理意识的浪漫主义诗人。本文首 先分析《夜莺颂》的听觉叙事策略及其诗歌形式特征,探索其蕴含伦理价值 的诗性氛围,然后阐释诗歌中的斯芬克斯因子、伦理选择和伦理价值,依据 文学的伦理意图与叙事形式之间的内在关联,深入挖掘《夜莺颂》的审美旨 趣和伦理内涵。

#### 一、济慈《夜莺颂》的听觉叙事结构与伦理价值的生产

聂珍钊强调,"文学的产生是伦理选择的结果,文学的价值在于记述了人的伦理选择"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评与文学理论创新的跨学科思考"83)。济慈在其经典之作《夜莺颂》中,通过多重听觉叙事文本传达其伦理思想,实现了诗歌所意指的伦理教化功能。

偶听、幻听和灵听是三种聆听方式,均源于听觉感知的不确定性,分别处在其完整性、真实性和可能性的对立面上。¹《夜莺颂》首先是一首"偶听"佳作。济慈在一个清晨偶然听到夜莺的歌声,然后回到房间,一气呵成,创作了《夜莺颂》。但是如果仅仅将诗歌第3节理解为济慈对现实世界悲惨境况的描写,认为诗歌反映了济慈的美好理想与悲惨社会现实之间的矛盾,这便简单化了诗歌的思想内涵和伦理价值。实际上,济慈只是"偶然"听到了夜莺的歌声,夜莺停留的时间非常短暂,它的歌声转瞬即逝。济慈在"偶听"文本中融入了"幻听"和"灵听"的元素,在确定的夜莺歌声中加入大量不确定的成分,使偶听、幻听、灵听三条叙事线索同时出现在一首诗歌之中,说明诗人力图通过听觉叙事文本表达深层的思想内涵。

诗歌的第1、2节营造了幻听的氛围。"我"好像"饮过毒鸩"<sup>2</sup>,也好像吞服过鸦片,又似乎喝了"冷藏在地下多年"的酒,"充满了鲜红的灵感

<sup>1</sup> 参见傅修延,《听觉叙事研究》,北京:北京大学出版社,2021年,第201页。

<sup>2</sup> 除两处特殊注明外,本文所引用的《夜莺颂》译文均来自济慈,《济慈诗选》,查良铮译, 北京:人民文学出版社,1958年,第70-74页。下文只标注诗节或诗行,不再一一说明。

之泉",感觉"困盹和麻木",仿佛到达了"列斯忘川",已经失去了正常人所具有的感知能力,此刻所听到的夜莺之歌似乎只是一种幻觉,并非真实的夜莺歌声。第4、5节再次强调"幻听"的特质:诗人的头脑"已经困顿、疲乏",他甚至无法辨识平日熟识的花草,他听到的夜莺之歌只是朦朦胧胧的幻觉,而非真实的情境。第6节则明确表示"我几乎爱上了静谧的死亡","在午夜里溘然魂离人间",虽然夜莺"仍将歌唱",诗人却"不再听见",这说明诗人所听到的歌声属于幻觉之音,没有任何真实性可言。

诗歌第7节又呈现出灵听的特征。夜莺之歌不仅"曾使古代的帝王和村夫喜悦",而且曾经"激荡/露丝忧郁的心,使她不禁落泪",甚至曾经引动古代美人打开窗户,遥望并期待她的骑士来援救她脱离古堡险境。夜莺固然在亘古时期就曾歌唱,但是诗人只有依靠超越时空的灵异功能,才能听到古代夜莺的奇异歌声,他所依赖的神奇媒介是"灵听"。

在第8节中,诗人告别了"幻想",称其为"骗人的妖童",仿佛夜莺之歌为幻想之物,属于空穴来风,以至于诗人自己也说不清"这是个幻觉,还是梦寐"。他不知道自己是在睡梦中,还是清醒着,这似乎表明全诗所写的夜莺之歌为幻听的产物。同时,诗人再一次描述夜莺的歌声"流过草坪,越过幽静的溪水,/溜上山坡",随后又"深深/埋在附近的溪谷中"。从空间距离来看,夜莺渐行渐远,诗人无论如何也无法再听到其歌声,夜莺歌声消逝的路径表明诗人正在进行灵听,平常人的听力根本无法获取那么遥远的声音。

偶听是诗人聆听的事实,幻听是《夜莺颂》的叙事框架,灵听是其中的 些许片段。诗人将偶听、幻听和灵听纳入颂诗之中,展现其感知夜莺歌声的 过程,将表达的不确定性与确定性并置于一个听觉空间,形成迷离恍惚的听 觉效果,使文本内涵更加丰富多彩,将伦理内涵蕴藏于浓厚的诗性氛围之中, 有助于实现其道德教诲功能。

#### 二、济慈《夜莺颂》中的听觉方式与伦理价值的生成

听觉方式包括三种: 听有、听无与无听。"听有"即为听取音景中的各种声音。声学意义上的音景包括三个层次: 主调音,信号音,标志音。¹《夜莺颂》的整幅音景是夏日的歌声,夏日的微风(48行)是主调音,蚊蚋嗡嗡的声音(50行)是信号音,夜莺之歌是标志音。全诗重点是写夜莺的歌声,其它蚊虫的声音构成音景的底色。夜莺"放开了歌喉,歌唱着夏季","倾泻着你的心怀/发出这般的狂喜",即使"我"已经死亡,它"仍将歌唱"。夜莺从亘古一直歌唱到今天,经历了世世代代,歌声跨过了河流和山岗,具有跨越时空的特性。夜莺嘹亮的歌声是诗人聆察的对象,诗人在倾听的过程中经历了从困盹到欢喜的心理转变过程,"忘掉这疲劳、热病、和焦躁"的

<sup>1</sup> 参见 傅修延, 《听觉叙事研究》, 北京: 北京大学出版社, 2021年, 第145页。

世界,这是所谓的"听有"。

"听无"是一种"灵魂之听",听不见的乐音乃是"至大至美之音"(傅修延 393),能够给文学作品带来特殊的意境。"听无"主要表现在《夜莺颂》第4、5节。此时,诗人身处"不甚明亮"之处,光线"幽暗",他的视觉已经无法发挥作用,不能看到身旁的植物,只能通过季节来猜想它们的名称。按照常理,诗人不得不闭目之时,应该完全打开"耳睑",能够更加清晰地领略夜莺歌声的曼妙与美好。但是,诗歌第5节并没有提及夜莺,诗人在全神贯注地想象他附近花草的名字,夜莺的歌声处于"无"的状态。视觉的"无"与听觉的"无"共同簇拥着诗人,表明诗人已经彻底遁出现实世界,"悄然离开尘寰"(18行),沉浸在夜莺歌声带给他的理想世界之中,这里只有果木的芬芳和花草的清香。诗人闭上了外在的眼睛,但是睁开了内在的眼睛,敞开心扉,用心去倾听和感受,在心灵的世界里尽情享受自然界的无穷魅力。此节"听无"与处于全诗主导地位的"听有"形成鲜明的对比,突出了夜莺歌声带给诗人心灵的冲击,为诗歌第7、8节听觉叙事达到高潮奠定了基础。

"无听"分为"无人之听与无闻之听"(傅修延 396)。《夜莺颂》中的"无人之听"表现在第6节,因为自然不需要人的存在,夜莺自在自足,不必顾及是否有人在倾听,只是尽情地歌唱,人可以消逝。诗人对此心有灵犀,主动离开夜莺的歌声,真诚地"爱上了静谧的死亡"(52行),"在午夜里溘然魂离人间"(56行),把主导世界的权力留给夜莺,让夜莺成为大自然唯一的歌者。在第6节末尾第2行,诗人已经死去,不能再倾听夜莺的歌声,夜莺喜悦的歌声"只能唱给泥草一块"(60行)。夜莺与泥草形成应和,自然界的动物和植物发生感应,不需要人的存在,诗歌由"无人之听"过渡到"无闻之听",诗人将脱离歌声的世界,思绪飞奔至"古代的帝王和村夫"(64行),以及"异邦的谷田"(67行),和泛动着险恶浪花的大海(70行)。夜莺之歌停留在诗人的思绪之中,但诗人的注意力不在于夜莺,而在于远古时期具有不同社会地位的人物。他们的故事带给诗人历史感和空间感,进一步帮助诗人体会到夜莺歌声的感染力,将诗人的思绪带到高潮。

无论济慈在倾听,还是在沉思,抑或在想象的世界里感受夜莺声音的魅力,都体现出诗人对夜莺的无限赞美和青睐。"没有教诲功能的文学是不存在的"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》7)。济慈在《夜莺颂》中通过描写"我"的在场和缺席等多种倾听方式,呈现出世界的纷繁复杂、千变万化,表现出其诗歌的多义性和含混性特征,为传达其伦理内涵提供了可能性。

#### 三、济慈《夜莺颂》中的听觉反应境界与伦理价值的表达

因声而听、因听而思和因听而悟是"代表听觉反应由浅入深的三重境界" (傅修延 237)。由上述分析可知,《夜莺颂》已经实现了第一、二层听觉 思维境界,那么它有没有达到因听而悟的第三重境界呢?表面看来,《夜莺颂》没有给出任何明确的结论,结尾两行的问句似乎只能表明济慈提出了问题,没有给出"悟"的答案。若仔细考量《夜莺颂》末尾两行"Was it a vision, or a waking dream? / Fled is that music: — Do I wake or sleep?"(Keats 372)的句法与格律特征,就能体会到诗人所悟到的伦理思想。

从句法来看,济慈连续使用两个问句,似乎是在询问"这是个幻觉,还是梦寐?"(79行),或"我是睡?是醒?"(80行),但实际上济慈正在说明他的观点:歌声虽然已经远去,但是歌声永远存留于这个世界,世界是复杂的,多元的,有真,有美,有离别,也有永恒。济慈的诗学思想具有模糊性特征,他的表现技巧是不断变化的,他在《希腊古瓮颂》中给出思索的结果,但是在《夜莺颂》中没有使用陈述句明确写出所悟所思,而是通过问句暗示其听觉叙事文本的旨归。

再从格律来看,济慈诗歌的伦理内涵通过四种方式得以呈现。第一,两行诗句中间都有停顿(caesura),四个半行诗歌构成一种"轮状回旋"(O'Neill 203),表示济慈对"音乐远去了"一事的质疑和反复思考。第二,扬抑格音节"Fled is"将动词前置,放在诗行开端,既是对"音乐远去了"一事的强调,也对整首诗的抑扬格表现出对抗的立场,对"音乐远去了"一事进行反讽,甚至是否定。第三,"音乐"一词在整首诗中第一次出现,虽然之前的7个诗节都在描述夜莺的歌声,却没有用"音乐"一词,而是称之为"sing","song","haunt","pouring forth thy soul","voice","the self-same song","the same","anthem",使夜莺的歌声余音绕梁,不绝于耳。第四,两行诗歌重复使用了"wake"一词,是对"清醒"状态的强调,意在说明:尽管夜莺已经远去,但歌声犹在;"wake"也是双关,表示济慈对现实世界的清醒认识。而且第一个"waking"是现在分词形式,第二个"wake"是动词原形,表示诗人经历了慢慢苏醒的过程,已经达到了清醒的状态。至此可以肯定,《夜莺颂》明显表达了"因声而听"和"因听而思",但"因听而悟"是通过暗示的方式来表达的。

《夜莺颂》开篇是先声后听,然后是听而后思,最后达到因听而悟的境界。"对于济慈来说,元音表示激情,辅音表示狂喜,句式就是他诗歌的生命力所在",济慈的语言总是"摇曳多姿的",句法具有"模糊性特征"(Stewart 141)。济慈领悟到现实很复杂,含有多种因素和多个层次,不能简单地用肯定句或否定句来概述,而是需要使用疑问句来呈现其真实面貌,表示确定无疑的观点,同时表现出思想的复杂性,而不是单一性,表现出诗歌的文学性,而不是哲学性。

《夜莺颂》中的幻想者倾向于从某种幻觉中醒来,并准备接受周围复杂的现实。聂珍钊指出,"一部文学经典的社会认同和接受,主要在于它的价值能不能被读者发现"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》146)。济慈使用多种听觉叙事方式构筑一种广义的诗性氛围,以便使读者在聆察夜莺美妙歌

声的同时, 能够感受其伦理价值。

#### 四、济慈《夜莺颂》中的斯芬克斯因子、伦理选择与伦理价值

根据文学伦理学批评理论, 无论在古代社会, 还是在现代的文明社会, 人都是由人性因子和兽性因子构成的,人总是"一个斯芬克斯因子或伏羲、 女娲因子的存在"(聂珍钊 王松林 7)。回顾《夜莺颂》文本可以发现,听 觉在诗歌中象征着人性因子,视觉象征着兽性因子,"诗人"始终处于两种 因子相互斗争所形成的伦理困境之中。诗歌第1节写到: "我的心在痛,困 盹和麻木/刺进了感官,有如饮过毒鸩,/ 又象是刚刚把鸦片吞服,/于是向 着列斯忘川下沉"。诗人面临兽性因子和人性因子对立的矛盾之中, 所以感 到非常痛苦。倾听夜莺的歌声是人性的选择,通往美好和善良的世界;逃避 声音是本能的倾向, 是兽性的选择。如果让人性战胜兽性, 诗人需要改变 原始的生物属性,就会感到痛苦:如若随同夜莺离开现实世界,他需要付 出艰辛的努力, 甚至需要借助美酒的力量(第2节), 或者诗神的双翼(第 4节)。如果不倾听夜莺的声音,自然而然的生活状态便是"疲劳、热病、 和焦躁","青春苍白、削瘦、死亡",以及"忧伤和灰眼的绝望"(第3 节)。如果不进行理性选择,尘俗的生活永远黑暗、无望,朱湘的译文十分 贴切: "尘思相拥,俗念相迂"(济慈"夜莺曲"210)。即使不排除兽性因 子的作用,"我看不出是哪种花草在脚旁,/什么清香的花挂在树枝上"(第 5节),视觉也已经失灵,诗人无法观察世界,只能依靠嗅觉来猜测花的种 类和颜色。第6节则摒弃视觉,转而依赖听觉来聆察世界。这是非常美好的时 刻,诗人"几乎爱上了静谧的死亡,/我在诗思里用尽了好的言辞,/求他把 我的一息散入空茫"。他宁愿赴死,也不愿意回到视觉的世界,愿意永远停 留在听觉的世界里,保持人性因子的作用。诗人对听觉、人性因子和永恒生 命的向往延伸到第7节,他想象夜莺歌声长存的状态:在时间上从今日远达亘 古,"古代的帝王和村夫"都曾经享受歌声带来的喜悦;在地域上从陆地远 达大海, 甚至能"在失掉了的仙域里引动窗扉": 从国度角度来说, 能从母 国远达异国,哪怕露丝来到异邦,仍能感受到夜莺带来的快乐(第7节)。

人"始终处于做人还是做兽的两种基本选择"之中,这种选择就是伦理选择(聂珍钊 王松林 7)。兽性因子是人的一种本性,兽性是人的本能反应和自然倾向;人性因子是主导因子,能够抑制和约束兽性因子,避免人做出错误的伦理选择。在《夜莺颂》中,经过前7节的较量,听觉的人性因子已经战胜了视觉的兽性因子,诗人认同并接受了听觉的生活方式,达到了"因听而悟"的境界。然而,济慈承认世界的复杂性,兽性因子不可能被排除,所以只能在第8节中戏谑地称夜莺为"骗人的妖童",称其歌声为"怨诉的歌声"。他确信,这歌声绝对不会远去,会永远留在诗人的生命里,却用疑问句写道:"噫,这是个幻觉,还是梦寐?/那歌声去了:——我是睡?是

醒?"诗人虽然选择了听觉,但是他习惯于在朦胧之中呈现真理,用模糊的 境界来呈现确定的思想。济慈的《夜莺颂》没有以肯定句来结尾,他用审美 的方式和修辞的语言表达自己的思想感悟,让读者自己去感受他的伦理顿 悟。济慈在《夜莺颂》中构筑一种特殊的叙事结构,创造出复杂多元的伦理 语境,使"我"难以做出伦理选择,延长了伦理选择的过程,既彰显了诗歌 的伦理价值, 又增强了审美力度。

文学伦理学批评与叙事学相互结合,能够解决"叙事如何有效地作为表 达伦理的手段"问题(聂珍钊 王松林 196)。依据对《夜莺颂》中听觉叙事 文本的分析,能够发现济慈巧妙地将诗歌的伦理价值蕴含于听觉叙事文本之 中。夜莺的歌声固然美好,但《夜莺颂》的主题绝不是逃避主义或唯美主义观念。 济兹富有独立个性和反抗精神,他了解自我及客观世界的复杂性,因此采用 多重叙事手法表达其伦理选择。我们应该调动多种感觉器官,注意聆听自然 界的声音,纠正人类长久以来偏好视觉、忽视听觉的积习,同时也要避免偏 爱听觉、忽视视觉的极端行为,以便真正理解我们赖以生存的世界。

#### **Works Cited**

- 勃兰兑斯:《十九世纪文学主流》(第四分册:英国的自然主义),徐式谷 江枫 张自谋译。北京: 人民文学出版社,1997年。
- [Brandes, George. Main Currents in Nineteenth Century Literature. IV. Naturalism in England, translated by Xu Shigu, Jiang Feng and Zhang Zimou. Beijing: The People's Literature Publishing House, 1997.]
- 傅修延: 《听觉叙事研究》。北京: 北京大学出版社, 2021年。
- [Fu Xiuyan. A Study of Auditory Narratology. Beijing: Peking UP, 2021.]
- 济慈: "夜莺曲",《番石榴集》,朱湘译。上海:商务印书馆,1936年,第201-214页。
- [Keats, John. "Ode to a Nightingale." Collection of Guava. Translated by Zhu Xiang. Shanghai: Commercial Press, 1936. 201-214.]
- 一: "夜莺颂",《济慈诗选》,查良铮译。北京:人民文学出版社,1958年,第70-74页。
- [-.. "Ode to a Nightingale." The Poems of John Keats, translated by Zha Liangzheng. Beijing: The People's Literature Publishing House, 1958. 70-74.]
- —. The Poems of John Keats, edited by Jack Stillinger. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard UP, 1978.
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值",《外国文学研究》 4 (2014): 8-13.
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: On Fundamental Function and Core Value of Literature." Foreign Literature Studies 4 (2014): 8-13.]
- 一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——:"文学伦理学批评与文学理论创新的跨学科思考",《华中师范大学学报(人文社会科学版)》

- 2 (2022): 79-84.
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism and Interdisciplinary Thoughts on Creativeness in Literary Theories." Journal of Central China Normal University (Humanities and Social Sciences) 2 (2022): 79-84.
- 聂珍钊 王松林主编: 《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin, eds. A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]
- O'Neill, Michael. "Prosody and Versification in the Odes." *John Keats in Context*. Edited by Michael O'Neill. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 2017. 198-206.
- O'Rourke, James, Keats's Odes and Contemporary Criticism. Gainesville, Florida: UP of Florida, 1998.
- Sheats, Paul D. "Keats and the Ode." *The Cambridge Companion to Keats*, edited by Susan J. Wolfson. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 2001. 86-101.
- Stewart, Garrett. "Keats and Language." *The Cambridge Companion to Keats*, edited by Susan J. Wolfson. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 2001. 135-151.
- Vendler, Helen. The Odes of John Keats. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard UP, 1983.

### 无名的共同体: "难民"作家的伦理选择

# Communitying Literature: On the Ethical Choice of "Refugee" Writers in *The Displaced*

李 昀(Li Yun) 周娉娣(Zhou Pingdi)

内容摘要:本文从文学伦理学批评的角度研究了《流离失所》中"难民"作家的伦理选择如何改写了文学本身的伦理性。书中18位时居欧美的移民作家,面对2016年前后西方政治的右转,自我去名,对欧美意识形态去认同,从"难民"位置上展开书写,从而改写了文学的定义,把书写者、书写方式和书写目的共同体化了:他们超越西方意识形态召唤的主体—他者界限,与他者融为一体,因而具有了与他人通感共情的能力,在感同身受中展开共同体化的书写,并且书写开门迎客、天下一家的共同体伦理。

关键词:《流离失所》;文学伦理学批评;难民文学;共同体

作者简介: 李昀, 华南理工大学外国语学院教授, 博士生导师, 主要研究方向为文学、文化批评; 周娉娣, 华南理工大学外国语学院副教授, 主要研究方向为英美文学。本文为国家社科基金项目"现实观照下国际难民文学的伦理学批评研究" 【项目批号: 19BWW088】阶段性成果。

**Title:** Communitying Literature: On the Ethical Choice of "Refugee" Writers in *The Displaced* 

**Abstract:** This article studies how the ethical choice of the authors in *The Displaced* refines literature. Facing the post-2016 risk of being deidentified, these 18 immigrant writers then living in Euro-America address themselves as "refugees", disidentifying themselves with western ideology, and thus communitying literature through communitying its writer, its writing, and its objective. In dispossessing western ideology, "refugee" authors transcend the Subject-Other division established by western ideology, communitying with the refugees under their pen. In this way, they speak as and for global refugees, visioning a harmonious human community in which people live together in friendship and love rather than separation and hatred. **Keywords:** *The Displaced*; ethical literary criticism; refugee literature; community **Authors: Li Yun** is Professor at the School of Foreign Languages, South China

University of Technology (Guangzhou 510641, China). Her academic research focuses on cultural and literary criticism (Email: flly@scut.edu.cn). **Zhou Pingdi** is

Associate Professor at the School of Foreign Languages, South China University of Technology (Guangzhou 510641, China). Her academic research focuses on English literary criticism (Email: pdzhou@scut.edu.cn).

从文学伦理学批评的角度研究作家创作,让我们发现《流离失所》(The Displaced, 2018)中作家们的伦理选择从根本上改变了文学的伦理性。书中,18位欧美移民作家纷纷自称"难民",对欧美意识形态去认同,回应2016年前后欧美意识形态右转激化的民族主义和民粹主义,在非虚构写作中回忆自己早年的难民经历,以及当下人人自危的感受,表明作家只有"再度难民"、"流离失所"、"无家可归",摒弃西方意识形态召唤的主体-他者界限,才能展开"文学"书写。此举把文学包括书写者、书写方式和书写目的共同体化了:作家们去西方意识形态占有,成为与他人一体的共同体书写者,因此具有了对他人感同身受的能力,在通感和共情中书写开门迎客、天下一家、万邦和谐的共同体记忆。

聂珍钊在倡导文学伦理学批评时指出,"伦理价值是文学最基本的价值" ("文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值" 13),应该"从伦理 视角认识文学的伦理本质和教诲功能,并在此基础上阅读、理解、分析和阐 释文学"("文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构" 71),包括研究作家 创作及作家与创作的关系,如作家创作与现实社会中伦理道德的关系,作家 的伦理道德立场及其产生的原因、时代背景、形成过程、对创作的影响等("文 学伦理学批评:文学批评方法新探索" 19)。从这个角度看去,《流离失所》 中,西方意识形态波动导致的难民一移民们对西方伦理政治制度的失望,让 作家们选择成为"难民"书写者,从而改变了文学本身的伦理性。

书中作家们开门见山地表达了对欧美意识形态的去认同,因为后者开始对他们去召唤,让他们在国族和意识形态认同上再度难民。关于西方的意识形态认同,阿尔都塞(Louis Althusser)在《意识形态与意识形态国家机器》中指出:意识形态国家机器把个体召唤为主体,接受召唤的是好主体,不接受的是坏主体,会被国家机器镇压。个体的自我认同和社会关系都是由意识形态召唤决定的,被召唤为主体的结为共同体,与此共同体外的人群对立,主体-他者的对立。沿着此话题,佩苏(Michel Pêcheux)作了进一步区分,辨析出三种情况:(1)认同(identification),好主体接受意识形态召唤;(2)反认同(counter-identification),坏主体反对主导意识形态提供的认同方式和形象;(3)去认同(disidentification),抵抗召唤本身,从"非主体的位置"反作用于主导意识形态,从内部改变其文化逻辑,发展出新的政治或书写形式。

佩苏的分析虽然没有跳出召唤 - 认同的基本框架,却暗示了超越此模式的可能性,个体不仅可以从反对的立场批判主导意识形态,还可以摆脱召唤 - 认同模式,在西方意识形态之外书写,这便是"难民"书写: 意识形态国家机器对难民们去召唤,让他们从自身系统中消失,或者不召唤他们,不给予他们任何权利,不以任何形式把他们纳入自身系统,让他们在其中没有任何位置,完全无身份,只剩下生物性存在。但对于"难民"作家而言,这也意味着他们可以超越召唤 - 接受的辩证关系,超越意识形态与主体的关系,在这种关系之外书写,进而书写新的人类关系。

这便是《流离失所》中作家们的伦理选择:他们自我难民,早已是合法移民,却自称难民,宣告了对欧美意识形态的去认同。从难民到移民到再度难民,他们经历了一系列认同变化。为了解释的方便,我们用"名"来翻译identification一词,命名即意识形态召唤,权威机构对个体在社会制度体系中身份和位置的规定,被命名的被纳入其中,不被命名的则被排除在外。难民一移民们与西方意识形态之间呈现出错综复杂的关系:命名的(identified)被意识形态国家机器召唤并接受召唤;无名的(non-identificatory)未被意识形态国家机器召唤,或者自我放逐于意识形态认同之外;除名的(deidentified)被意识形态国家机器去召唤,剥夺成为公民一主体的权利;去名的(disidentified)不接受意识形态国家机器召唤,放弃对主导意识形态甚至召唤本身的认同。其中命名的还有一个变体,误名的(misidentified),即个体误以为找到了可以皈依的身份,却发现自己认同的意识形态根本没有接受自己,承认自己为主体。

《流离失所》展示了一个难民的基本经历:他拒绝了流出国意识形态召唤,进入流入国,却很难被他希望寻求庇护的意识形态国家机器接受,成为主体,而是在很长时间内甚至终生都无法得到承认。即便暂时被容纳,也会因为意识形态波动再度被否定、拒绝或排斥,剥夺先前的命名,陷入无名状态。这种剥夺可能是实际的,被遣返,也可能是想象的,虽然国家机器没有强制排除其生物存在,意识形态的排斥却让他感受到了歧视、威胁和剥夺,让他意识到自己先前对该国意识形态的认同其实是虚幻的,他的自我命名从未得到承认。这种觉醒会导致他对该国意识形态的去认同或者去占有(dispossessed; Butler and Athanasiou),丧失认同对象,进而丧失可以依仗的(想象的)身份。所以The Displaced这一标题包含着三重含义:(1)被意识形态错置(displaced),放在了错误的位置;(2)被意识形态去置(displaced),失去原有位置(dis-located);(3)自我去置(self-dis-placed),把自己拔出意识形态召唤的(错误)位置。

书中,作家们选择了自我去置,取消先前对西方意识形态的误认,自我去名为无名者:"以前,我从不认为自己是难民。在我的意识中,我是移民(······) 难民似乎是过去的事(······)只是近年来我才开始自称难民"(Vu Tran, "Refugee

Again" 142)¹。这段话概括了 2016 年前后欧美难民 - 移民们经历的自我认知变化。这些早年有过难民经历,早已在欧美获得合法居住权,跻身中产阶级的作家,开始自称"难民",意识到自己从未被现居国接受,先前对其的认同以及因此获得的自我命名只是一种错觉,这种觉醒让他们开始自我去名,与欧美意识形态保持距离。

带来新身份认知的,是欧美意识形态的变化。恍惚间,西方政治已经极速右转,墙已建起,民族主义和民粹主义取代了曾经看似温和的歧视,英国脱欧和特朗普上台更是推升了对难民-移民的敌意,难民恐惧症、移民威胁论空前兴起,变得明目张胆、堂而皇之:伊斯兰妇女在公交上受辱,小学生在教室里敲着桌子狂喊"脱欧!脱欧!"还有人冲到疑似外国人面前高喊"我们投票让你滚回去!现在滚!"大众媒体"说着粗俗暴力的语言",叫嚣着要严惩反对脱欧和特朗普的"国贼"(Marina Lewycka, "Refugees and Exiles"118)。这些变化让难民-移民们恐慌,感到了被除名的威胁:"我是穆斯林,难民,同性恋。特朗普的完美目标"(Aleksandar Hemon, "God's Fate"94)。"特朗普成为总统,你的国家也上了六个'穆斯林禁令'国名单。你突然就成了穆斯林。突然无人再怀疑你是棕色的"(Porochista Khapour,"13 Ways of Being an Immigrant"111)。他们还意识到风险不是暂时的,两大事件"不会局限于自己的历史时空"(Lewycka 117),而是会影响我和儿孙全部余生生活。

这种认知刺破了曾经的身份幻觉。他们曾自以为早已被欧美接纳,给予稳定的身份,让他们可以在此"舒适地定居",对这个国度产生了强烈的归属感,热爱其"语言微妙狡黠的光华"(118),为自己说着这种语言而骄傲。这种误名曾让他们自视为新世界的移民,得到召唤,不再是难民。后者只是"土耳其和利比亚海边从漏水的小船上仓惶跳下的母亲和孩子,或者被冲到地中海海滩上已经悄无声息的年轻身体,很悲伤,却与我无关"(113)。然而,现实刺破了这个玫瑰色的梦,欧美早已成为社会阶级和代际分裂的国度,我却"注定要在一个面目全非的国度度过余生"(118)。梦的破碎始于意识形态对其的排斥,当他们发现自己的肤色、样貌、习性、信仰等再度引人注意为人忌惮时,就意识到自己从未真正被那个曾经口称欢迎你的国度接受:"现在我有了一个女儿,已经看得出是伊朗裔了。她人生第一大事件是脱欧。第二是特朗普当选。脱欧那天早上五点,我正在给她喂奶,我的粉色头纱记忆又回来了。"他们本以为已经挺过了初来时的特殊待遇,现在却发现自己从未也无法摆脱"难民"状态,随时可能被除名:欧美"不想要我"(Dina Nayeri,"The Ungrateful Refugee" 138-139)。

<sup>1</sup> 本文有关《流离失所》的引文均来自 Viet Thanh Nguyen, *Nothing Ever Dies*, Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 2016。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。凡未特殊注明,引文均出自笔者拙译。

这种认知带来了对欧美的去认同,除名风险带来的自我去名。除名风险带来的再度失家的感觉,甚至超过了逃离时的惊惶无助。彼时,他们内心是有认同的,被流入国接纳的微弱幻想,维持着他们出走后的最后一丝认同,支撑着他们的存在。然而现在,这最后一丝希望破灭了,他们陷入彻底的认同缺乏,开始自我去名,在情感和认识上自我放逐,疏远曾经接受的意识形

同缺乏,开始自我去名,在情感和认识上自我放逐,疏远曾经接受的意识形态,自认为"难民",身处欧美,却无以为家,不再把其视为向往之地,因为"我们是且始终是外人"(Lewycka 118)。他们发现自己先前的认同不过是一种误认,错误地认识了欧美意识形态,也错误地想象了自己的被接纳。

幻想破灭,便是取消误名的开始。他们意识到自己曾经是难民,现在则是手持绿卡的"难民",无法得到承认,便取消先前的误名:"那个我们引以为家的国,只是孩提时代玫瑰色的田园,永远把我们放逐在外"(119)。这是对欧美意识形态的批判,更是对先前误认的取消,承认那不过是一个玫瑰色的梦,如今的梦醒就是对先前认同的去认同。他们甚至承认,内心的怀疑从进入这个国度就开始了,日积月累成了今日的弃绝。他们从一开始就知道自己不受欢迎,身份审查不是为了接受他们,而是为了排除和否定他们:"一切开始于你身份的逐渐褪去,姓名和头衔让位给数字和文件。你成为一张要盖章的签证,一双隔离区医生要检查的瞳孔,让火车超载的55公斤;往坏了说是一种病毒,往好了说是一颗不断转化的尘埃〔……〕这是主体与纯粹对象之间细微残酷的区别"(Lev Golinkin, "Guests of the Holy Roman Empress Maria Theresa"62)。

这造成了他们与认同对象之间的隔阂,破坏着他们的认同想象,直至耗尽最初的幻想:成为难民"是一个漫长的过程,"不断剥夺他们可以用于自我命名的东西,可以让他们安身立命的锚,把他们变成"无根无系的幽灵,需要新的生活",却永远也找不到停泊之所。这不仅仅是被排斥,更是除名风险带来的心理上的自我偏离,意识到自己"不再是任何国家的公民,没有可以回去的家,也没有要找的地址"(61-62)。除名的风险和想象,让他们不断远离对欧美心理、情感和认识上的接受,"风化"了重新命名的希望,学会"小心"西方人(62)。这条想象的界限,让他们"真切感受到自己不可挽回地成了难民"(61)。

这是对认同一归化的怀疑,质疑召唤和认同本身的价值,包括认同对象、过程和结果的意义。作家们首先质疑了认同结果,怀疑承认和接受的意义:即便得到承认,也可能充满荒诞,带来的不是归属感而是歧视,根本不是自己想要的和应得的。比如一位伊朗裔移民女性,经历了童年买不起布娃娃的阶段,努力学习和成长,成为纽约的大学生,却始终无法融入同学圈。在英国交换时,她终于被英国同学指认为"美国人",却是因为吸毒、酗酒、滥

交,一次次被强奸却保持沉默。她通过写作在社会上立足,最终也只是被承认为意味深长的"伊朗裔美国作家。"所以,当拿到绿卡成为法律意义上的美国人时,她感到的不是得到承认的欣慰,而是对承认的怀疑:这种承认承认了她的"归化",她却在归化中失去一切,无家可归:你"在这个国家无根无底,没有任何理由呆在这里,"呆在"真正的、暴力的、从未保护你的美国"(Khapour 111)。

这是承认的暴力:无法带来归属感的承认毫无意义。这让难民-移民们对归途惶惑不安:"你想着自己是否生是美国人死是美国鬼〔·····〕意识到你将死为美国鬼,你心生欢喜〔·····〕痛苦不堪〔·····〕惶惑恐惧"〔112〕。政治气候的变化让他们感到"你的旧世界回来了"〔110〕,将被迫再次重演对居住国的去认同。他们曾经那么想融入现居国,得到承认,终究不过一场空,让他们意识到曾经的渴望和努力多么荒诞,甚至周围的金发路人都在嘲笑他们,嘲笑他们曾那么想融入,曾寄希望于白人,曾自以为成功。西方的接受和承认带给他们的不是被接纳的幸福,而是要逃离的噩梦,摧毁了他们的自我认同,也让他们对召唤和认同本身充满怀疑。

整个召唤 - 认同过程也充满怀疑。流入国召唤他们的归化和服从,却从未带来他们的全心接受,反而制造了各种内心隔阂,因为整个召唤过程满是伪饰和浮夸。难民们从进入移入国开始,就要学习"感恩",要庆幸自己成了美国人,要随时记得证明"因为认识我,西方变得更好了"(Nayeri 137)。"感恩教育"召唤着他们,要求他们对西方意识形态的接受和服从,承认这个国度远远优于其他地方,而伊朗"男人对女人很粗暴"(132)。难民们却发现自己无法承认"愚蠢的伊朗人"是不能强过美国人的(130),他们更想高喊"我很幸运,我很感激,我在班上最聪明"(130),不是一个美国人的聪明,而是一个伊朗裔小孩的聪明。召唤带来了相反的自我命名。

这也通向了对认同对象的怀疑,怀疑"国家""公民""边界"等基本 西方理念。西方意识形态要求难民们承认逃离国的恶,作家们却在怀疑"何 为国?何为公民?我们乡归何处?欠彼此什么?"(Bezogis,"The Common Story"36-37)正是这些概念导致了国与国、民族与民族、信仰与信仰之间的分裂和对立,导致"世界各地无休止的动荡"(Mengiste,"This Is What the Journey Does"122);导致在欧美和非洲、中东一样,都会遇到"对非我族类的殴打和焚烧"(Tshuma,"New Lands, New Selves"156);导致"承诺和希望的破灭,无法忘怀和说出的轻慢和侮辱";导致难民们四处流浪,无法找到"安全、共同体和家"(Hadero,"To Walk in Their Shoes"81-82)。

否定了认同的对象、过程和结果,也就否定了认同本身,这是更为根本的自我去名:没有了对认同本身的认同,缺乏带来身份倚仗的认同想象,他们成为彻底的无名者。他们先是失于错置,处于误名和错位中,现在则是自我去置,处于无名和失位中:"流离失所等于错置,被迫离开所属位置,再

无合适位置"(Tshuma 154)。这是自我认同的失根,失去了心之所属和伦理皈依,他们成了真正的"难民"。

Ξ

然而,在作家们看来,这却是一个机遇,他们可以籍此超越西方意识形态,重新定义文学及其伦理性,从"无家可归"的位置上开展去西方意识形态占有的书写,促成了文学书写者、书写方式和书写目的的共同体化。首先,书写者成为共同体:西方意识形态召唤主体 - 他者的对立,"难民"作家则因为去西方意识形态占有而克服了我他分界,主体与他者、书写者与书写对象融为一体,形成一个无限的共同体。其次,与他者一体,书写者也具有了与他人通感、共情的能力,可以对他人的情感和感受感同身受,「展开我他一体的书写。最后,他书写的也必然是他我一体、世界一人、天下一家的共同体伦理。

阮清越在《序》(Viet Than Nguyen, "Introduction")中演示了这种共同体化。他开篇就提到虽然我是移民,但是"我坚持让人称我难民"(8),取消了对西方意识形态的认同,也取消了它召唤的主体—他者界限,把他者带入我这边,成为"我们"(Viet Than Nguyen, Nothing Ever Dies 7):"我"成为与他者一体的共同体,一个无名的因而也无界限的"我们"。"我"也因此具有了对他人感同身受的能力,<sup>2</sup>通过感受自身的痛苦来感受他人的痛苦,在感同身受中书写他人的苦难和脆弱性。

在《序》中,阮选择了第一人称叙述,通过讲述自己曾为难民的感受来讲述其他难民的感受。对于他人的经历,他不是采取客观观察的方式,从高高在上的作者即上帝视角讲述我对他人的观察,把他人变成与我分离的书写对象,而是通过重新感受自己身为难民的感受,来感受具有相同经历的他人的感受,我的感受因此与他人的感受融合在一起,我就在这种感同身受中与他人结为一体。阮在文中用得最多的表达便是"我记得""我不记得""我想象",回忆自己的难民经历,但不只是为了回忆、想象或讲述自己的经历和感受,而是在对自身经历和感受的回忆和想象中,想象和感受其他难民的经历和感受。

阮4岁时于越战后随父母来到美国,对难民经历所记不多,"对于我不记得的一切,我满怀感激,因为我记得的东西已经让我痛不欲生"(10),但是他说"我必须想象自己曾经历过什么"(10),不是为了回忆自己的经历,而是希望通过重新体验和感受曾经的伤痛,来体验和感受其他难民的痛楚:"但我确实记得被资助人带来见我父母,在被带走时大哭大闹。我记得

<sup>1</sup> 参见 李昀: "感同身受的共同体:论阮清越的大同主义伦理选择",《文学跨学科研究》5 (2021):71-83。

<sup>2</sup> 参见李昀: "感同身受的共同体:论阮清越的大同主义伦理选择",《文学跨学科研究》5 (2021):83。

几个月后我重新回到父母身边那雪那冷还有我母亲不知为何从我们的生活中消失了不知多久,我只是隐约觉得与她远离故国家人土地安逸以及她自己有关。记起这些,我知道我已经预示了接下来最痛苦的日子,未来几十年她将经历的一切"(10)。"我"努力想象和感受自己曾经的痛,是为了更好地了解父母的痛,这种了解不是来自父母的诉说,或者我对其的观察,而是我对自身经历的再感受,在感同身受中想象和体验父母经历的一切。我的感受因此就是他们的感受,我在感受中与他们融为一体。

这是共情的书写,真正意义上的共情,来自对他人苦难和脆弱性的感同身受。阮还把这种共情差序地推向周围越裔社区和全球难民,与他们融为情感、感觉的共同体:"从我所记得和不记得的一切中,我相信自己与叙利亚难民以及六千五百六十多万被联合国划为无家可归的人成了亲人"(13)。难民经历让我痛苦,但是我珍视这段经历,它让我可以感受和想象他人的苦难,也让我可以自我去名,成为超越西方意识形态的同情者,与所有有类似经历的人深切共情:"我滋养曾为难民的感觉,因为作家必须进入伤痛之处,必须知道身为他者是怎样的感觉。作家无法体验他人的生活,就不会有作品,只有通过记忆、想象和共情等活动,才能培养我们对他人感同身受的能力"(14)。文学来自共情,需要作者自我去名,成为可以对他人苦难感同身受的"难民",于共情的书写中与对象结为一体。

这样的共同体-我也必然会书写共存伦理,消解西方意识形态强调的国家界限,想象天下一家、世界一人的全球共同体:"我们应该审视我们现在的国界情况,我们应该想象一个更加正义的世界,其中界限只是文化和身份的标记,有价值却可以轻易跨越,而不是法律界限,被设立来严格我们的国籍身份,让我们时刻准备着冲突和战争,彼此隔阂"(Nguyen,"Introduction"16)。界限是难民产生的根本原因,所以难民文学的书写必须溶解界限,书写族群与族群、文化与文化、国与国之间相互依存、命运与共的伦理,愿望睦邻友好、万邦和谐、天下一家的人类社群:"界限的溶解是世界主义的乌托邦愿景,愿望世界和平,愿望无人流离失所的全球场域,愿望人类就是一个全球共同体,允许文化差异,而不是那些导致剥削、惩罚和屠杀的差异。让界限可以穿越,我们彼此相邻,相亲相爱。这种憧憬让我热血沸腾,有人却觉得它莫名恐惧"(16)。

阮还认为这并非什么新话题,相反,历史和文学史中充盈着仁者爱人、守望相助的故事,只是强调国家-界限的西方意识形态遮蔽了这些: "我们曾经那么会爱人,睦邻友好,衣蔽贫弱,食养饥馑,开门迎客。铭记这些,才能梦想一个看重人而非边界的未来,为之奋斗" (16)。 "难民"文学要提供仁爱友善、开门迎客的记忆,看重人性而非边界的记忆。这种记忆表明我与他人休戚相关、命运与共,不是因为意识形态的要求,而是因为我们本为一体。因为这种一体性,我可以在自身脆弱性中感受他人的脆弱性,如这些

"难民"作家一样,通过书写自身经历,纪念那些颠沛流离的生命,感受他 们的悲喜,揭开西方意识形态对他们的遮蔽,也在对他们的苦难和脆弱性的 感受中与全球无家可归者结为一体。

总之,从文学伦理学批评的角度分析《流离失所》中的创作,让我们意 识到"难民"作家自我去名的伦理选择,改写了文学的伦理责任,也改变了 文学本身的伦理性,带来了文学的共同体化,把文学变成了"共同体文学"。

#### **Works Cited**

- Althusser, Louis. "Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses." Lenin and Philosophy and Other Essays, translated by Ben Brewster. New York: Monthly Review Press, 1971. 85-126.
- Butler, Judith and Athena Athanasiou. Dispossession: The Performative in the Political. Cambridge: Polity Press, 2013.
- Nguyen, Viet Thanh. Nothing Ever Dies. Cambridge: Harvard UP, 2016.
- —. ed. The Displaced: Refugee Writers on Refugee Lives. New York: Abrams Press, 2018.
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:文学批评方法新探索",《外国文学研究》5(2004):16-24。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Approach to Literary Studies: A New Perspective." Foreign Literature Studies 5 (2004): 16-24.]
- "文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值",《外国文学研究》10(2014):8-13。
- [-.. "Ethical Literary Criticism: On Fundamental Function and Core Value of Literature." Foreign Literature Studies 10 (2014): 8-13.]
- 一: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020):71-92+205-206。
- [ ... "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethical Literary Criticism." Social Sciences in China 10 (2020): 71-92.]
- Pêcheux, Michel. Language, Semantics, and Ideology, translated by Harbans Nagpal. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1982.

## 论《在西方的目光下》中的道德危机与拉祖莫夫的 伦理选择

# On the Moral Crisis in *Under Western Eyes* and Razumov's Ethical Choice

杨玉立 (Yang Yuli)

内容摘要:《在西方的目光下》展现了俄罗斯特殊伦理环境中个人面临的两难伦理选择与悖论。压倒性的政治秩序和政治环境混淆了小说主人公拉祖莫夫的道德方向。偶然间,他被卷入了政治案件,面临着革命与专制两种极端的伦理选择。支持专制政府却背叛了革命者哈尔丁,拉祖莫夫由此产生了相互矛盾的双重伦理身份,陷入身份危机和道德危机。为了摆脱困境,他做出了悲剧性的伦理选择——忏悔并坦白自己的背叛,重新找回道德方向。拉祖莫夫的悲剧揭示了在极端的政治伦理环境下个体永远面临悖论和两难,几乎不可能做出一劳永逸的符合多重价值需求的伦理选择。

关键词:《在西方的目光下》;约瑟夫·康拉德;道德危机;伦理选择作者简介:杨玉立,浙江大学人文学院博士研究生,主要研究方向为英国文学。本文系国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号:19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** On the Moral Crisis in *Under Western Eyes* and Razumov's Ethical Choice **Abstract:** *Under Western Eyes* shows the dilemma and paradox faced by individuals in Russia's particular ethical environment. The overwhelming political order and political environment confuse the moral direction of the novel's protagonist, Razumov. Occasionally, he was involved in a political case and faced the two extreme ethical choices of revolution and autocracy. Supporting the autocratic government but betraying the revolutionary Harding, it produced a contradictory dual ethical identity and Razumov fell into an identity crisis and a moral crisis. In order to get out of the predicament, he made a tragic ethical choice—repentance and confession of his betrayal, and regained his moral direction. Razumov's tragedy reveals that in the extreme political and ethical environment, individuals are always faced with paradoxes and dilemmas, and it is almost impossible to make ethical choices that meet the needs of multiple values once and for all.

**Keywords:** Under Western Eyes; Joseph Conrad; moral crisis; ethical choice

Author: Yang Yuli is Ph.D. Candidate in Comparative Literature and World Literature, School of Humanities, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her research focuses on English literature (Email: 1401036768@gq.com).

波兰裔英国作家约瑟夫 • 康拉德 (Joseph Conrad, 1857-1924) 出生于沙俄 统治下的乌克兰,父母死于政治迫害,成年后的二十年里康拉德跟随法国船 队游历了众多国家,最后在英国定居进行小说创作,康拉德的双重文化背景 和政治经历构建了其小说的复杂性。19世纪末20世纪初是俄国文化对英国文 化产生巨大影响的时期, 以英国为代表的西方对东方进行了新的观察和价值 评判, 康拉德的小说集中体现了俄罗斯这一特定空间中的政治与伦理冲突。《在 西方的目光下》(Under Western Eyes, 1910)是康拉德的代表作,也是作家唯 一一部以俄罗斯为背景的小说,小说既包含复杂的俄罗斯政治问题,也反映 了个人在极端政治伦理环境下面临的伦理两难与悖论。

英国批评家莫顿•扎贝尔在上世纪50年代所写的一篇导论性文章《对西 方的威胁》(The Threat to the West)将这部作品置于旧俄罗斯时代的历史语 境之下,指出康拉德写作此书的意图乃是为"西方人在需要做出道德判断时" 提供一种"预言性的警告"(Knowles 384)。小说《在西方的目光下》由此 进入批评家的视野。但随之而来的东西方冷战却使得当时众多的批评家将目 光更多地投向了这部作品的国际背景及其政治性内涵。从这一趋势可以看出 该小说的道德批判和政治批评占据了西方批评的主流。国内研究也是如此, 宁一中在《康拉德学术史研究》中有对国内康拉德研究的概括:现有研究主 要聚焦于康拉德的政治态度,点出了康拉德政治保守派的立场,强调社会秩 序和社会稳定,道德方面也散发着英式的保守气息。另外,批评家注意到尽 管康拉德尽量保持着中立立场,但小说中的俄国形象恰恰暴露出康拉德政治 思想中的诸多的矛盾点,禁欲主义外表下无法掩盖的矛盾冲突,才是康拉德 政治意识的内核。1在此基础之上,本文以《在西方的目光下》为例,运用文 学伦理学批评的相关理论,结合康拉德的创作背景,从拉祖莫夫面临的两难 的伦理选择、拉祖莫夫的身份与道德危机、拉祖莫夫道德方向的迷失与回归 三个方面探讨康拉德如何在特定空间展现个人的道德危机。具体而言,极端 的政治伦理环境使拉祖莫夫面临着极端的伦理选择,混淆了他的道德方向。 拉祖莫夫的理性的伦理选择使他产生了矛盾的双重伦理身份,陷入了身份危 机和道德危机,最后拉祖莫夫不得不做出悲剧性的伦理选择重新确立自己的 道德方向。

<sup>1</sup> 参见 宁一中: 《康拉德学术史研究》,南京:译林出版社,2014年,第298页。其他研究 主要包括20世纪前期的康拉德研究,认为小说《在西方的目光下》揭示了"典型的康拉德情节", 同时提出了新问题: 1. 康拉德如何通过俄国形象的描绘再现他所阐释的问题? 2. 同样是自我救 赎为创作重点,康拉德选择俄罗斯题材,意义有何不同?

#### 一、革命还是专制——两难的伦理选择

小说的主人公拉祖莫夫想要确认自己的伦理身份,但他又面对着身份困惑,这种困惑来源于他的孤儿伦理身份。根据文学伦理学批评,人的身份是一个人在社会中存在的标识,人需要承担身份所赋予的责任与义务(聂珍钊263)。拉祖莫夫是一个孤儿,因此缺乏一个被他人认可、与他人联系的伦理身份,拉祖莫夫的身份建构与俄罗斯这个国家紧密联系在一起。然而,随着哈尔丁的出现,拉祖莫夫被牵扯进政治事件中,面临着极端的伦理选择:是否帮助哈尔丁不仅是个人行为抉择,更是一种政治方向选择。

从小说的开篇,拉祖莫夫就被家人的缺席所定义。拉祖莫夫处在社会关系的边缘,缺乏明确的身份感和方向感,"无论是在官方上还是在事实上,他都没有家庭(……),没有家庭影响了他的感受和塑造了他的观点。他在这个世界上就像一个在深海里游泳的人一样孤独。拉祖莫夫这个词仅仅是一个孤独的个体的标签"(Conrad 9)。拉祖莫夫有着不可知的过去与未来,与康拉德在《独裁与战争》中对俄罗斯的描述相呼应,拉祖莫夫与那些未定义、本质上不可知的事物联系在一起。

由于没有明确的个人历史和身份,拉祖莫夫将自己的身份与俄罗斯这个国家联系在一起,他声称俄罗斯是他的父母,并渴望成为一名著名的学者。拉祖莫夫专注于写一篇获奖文章,他相信:"卓越将把拉祖莫夫的标签变成一个受人尊敬的名字"(Conrad 13-14)。拉祖莫夫希望用国家的历史来补充他自己的历史和背景。他开始努力写作,试图通过写作叙事构建自己的伦理身份。拉祖莫夫试图通过写一篇既能满足学术权威又能满足政府权威的文章,来为他漫无目的的存在创造一个基础,来讲述一个能给他提供身份和目的的故事。

拉祖莫夫的写作思考很快被打断了,哈尔丁出人意料地出现在拉祖莫夫的房间。哈尔丁策划并实行了一场政府官员的刺杀活动,正在躲避政府的追捕,他请求拉祖莫夫提供帮助。拉祖莫夫被推到了一个抉择的路口。选择是否帮助哈尔丁也是一种极端的政治选择——选择革命还选择独裁。对于拉祖莫夫来说,选择帮助哈尔丁意味着选择革命,意味着与政府的决裂,也意味着与自己的过去,与民族的过去的决裂。

"根据文学伦理学批评,在文学作品中,伦理选择往往同解决伦理困境 联系在一起,因此伦理选择需要解决伦理两难的问题"(聂珍钊 268)。拉 祖莫夫面临着伦理两难的困境,专制和革命是一个两难选择,选择专制政府 意味着背叛自己的朋友,而选择哈尔丁意味着背叛自己的过去、毁掉国家的 传统,拉祖莫夫难以做出选择。根据文学伦理学批评,伦理两难是难以做出 选择的,一旦做出选择,就往往导致悲剧。拉祖莫夫的伦理两难是在政治与 伦理的冲突中产生的,拉祖莫夫的伦理选择导致了他的个人悲剧。

拉祖莫夫开始思考意识形态问题,他感悟到民族苦难的历史、人民的忍 耐和土地的沉默并渴望归顺于强大而同一的意志。他把哈尔丁视为分裂的代 表,意识到必须与革命者划清界限。他决定反对革命,支持特权,接着,拉 祖莫夫开始树立信念、寻找立场。他的思想始终没有脱离意识形态的论争, 即自由主义和保守主义之间难以回避的冲突。俄国的西方派和斯拉夫派之间 的思想斗争汇聚在拉祖莫夫心头。拉祖莫夫的立场从自由主义转向保守主义, 他排斥自由主义,排斥自我冲突的现实,他拒绝现实的矛盾和分裂,转向宗 法社会的古老信念,接受强权意志和独裁政府。

最终他理清了头绪,写了上下排列的五个句子:历史而非理论;爱国 主义而非国际主义; 进化而非革命; 指导而非破坏; 团结而非分裂(Conrad 68)。在这几组对立中拉祖莫夫选择了前者。拉祖莫夫与俄罗斯这个国家紧 密相连,他无法想象个人与社会对抗的命运,因此对哈尔丁的要求和革命事 业产生了抵触。对于拉祖莫夫来说,他依靠俄罗斯虚幻的历史稳定为自己的 现在和未来提供一个基础,而哈尔丁的进步只能通过暴力来实现,因此将不 可避免推翻这个国家的历史。正如他向哈尔丁抗议的那样:"我没有家庭传统、 我没有什么可反对的,我的传统是历史性的,除了你们这些先生们想要毁掉 的国家的过去,我还有什么可回顾的?"(Conrad 61)

拉祖莫夫最终做出了背叛哈尔丁的伦理选择,他将哈尔丁的行踪报告给 了政府。作为理性意志的代表,拉祖莫夫选择了对历史的修正而不是对历史 的颠覆。拉祖莫夫希望回到过去有序而非一种混乱无序的状态,他认为这个 国家也是如此。因此,他相信国家的出路是保守主义所坚持的修正,俄罗斯 需要新的方向和理论指导,这些都基于民族的统一。可是拉祖莫夫做出的伦 理选择直接导致了哈尔丁的死亡, 并且导致他的伦理身份的瓦解, 最终导向 了他的悲剧命运。

#### 二、负重或赎罪——拉祖莫夫的身份与道德危机

拉祖莫夫因告密行为与俄罗斯当局产生了联系。当拉祖莫夫去拜访K亲 王时, K 亲王像慈父一样安慰他: "没有人怀疑你行为的道德合理性, 在这 方面你放心"(Conrad 82)。K亲王并不怀疑拉祖莫夫,作为独裁政权的领 袖,他维护了本党的利益,没有就暗杀事件询问拉祖莫夫。但 T 将军对拉祖 莫夫产生了怀疑,他不断地询问拉祖莫夫,对他表现出极大地兴趣,拉祖莫 夫感觉到 T 将军的怀疑, 他可能终其一生都是政治嫌疑人。哈尔丁被捕后, 特工搜查了拉祖莫夫的房间, 所有文件都被翻阅了, 显然, 以 T 将军为代表 的权威不会轻易放过拉祖莫夫。对 T 将军而言, 拉祖莫夫是一名持不同政见者, 可能对政府构成潜在的威胁,他把拉祖莫夫视为嫌疑人。

拉祖莫夫被不安和恐惧包围,不断地为自己辩解。拉祖莫夫的辩白给米 库林留下了深刻的印象。在米库林看来,拉祖莫夫那种"独特的气质、多变 的思想以及动摇的良知"无疑使他成为了被派往欧洲以打探流亡者情报的最理想人选米库林在这个"不寻常的"、"已经被控制住"的年轻人身上发现了一种"特殊的使用价值"(Conrad 255)。他以一种不容拒绝的强硬语气对拉祖莫夫说道: "你往哪儿去啊! 你走的时候像空气一样自由,但是你最终得回到我们这儿,你已经变成了上帝的工具"(Conrad 246)。拉祖莫夫被专制政府构建了另一种伦理身份:统治者的工具。最终拉祖莫夫沦为政治工具作为间谍被派往日内瓦监视那里的革命分子。

拉祖莫夫的身份很快引起了革命者的怀疑,他们怀疑拉祖莫夫与哈尔丁事件之间的关联,认为是拉祖莫夫背叛了哈尔丁。在哈尔丁进行暗杀活动之前,他寄给远方的家人和革命伙伴一封信,信中提到了拉祖莫夫,哈尔丁将拉祖莫夫描述为"没有污点、崇高而孤独的存在"(Conrad 170)。对于想知道哈尔丁最后几天发生了什么事的人来说,信中出现的拉祖莫夫是唯一的线索。拉祖莫夫不想再提及这件事,同时又试图隐瞒自己的背叛,导致革命者对他误解不断。红鼻子学生给革命者写了一封信,告诉他们齐米尼奇可能与哈尔丁被捕有关。当索菲亚•安东诺夫娜谈到齐米尼奇时,拉祖莫夫立刻否认认识他。安东诺夫娜得出结论:齐米尼奇背叛了哈尔丁,为此他怀着悔恨自杀了。齐米尼奇将拉祖莫夫从困境中暂时拯救出来,成为了哈尔丁事件的替罪羊。

哈尔丁最后的信件和拉祖莫夫的刻意隐瞒导致了革命者对拉祖莫夫身份的错误理解,将他视作被证实的革命者、朋友和同志,他们单方面建构了拉祖莫夫的身份。对于革命者来说,哈尔丁暗杀 P 大臣是一件伟大的事,而拉祖莫夫帮助哈尔丁完成了这项事业,他们对拉祖莫夫表示尊敬。可拉祖莫夫并不认同革命者的政治选择,而且革命者哈尔丁的出现彻底毁掉了拉祖莫夫的生活,拉祖莫夫对革命者充满了厌恶,当伊万诺维奇夸赞拉祖莫夫是一个非凡的人时,他反驳说伊万诺维奇错了,甚至幻想"他不仅可以毫无愧疚的刺伤他,而且还可以带着一种可怕的、胜利的满足感刺伤他"(Conrad 199)。拉祖莫夫对革命者充满了复杂的情绪,一方面是对哈尔丁及其家人的愧疚,另一方面是对革命者的憎恨。

拉祖莫夫背叛哈尔丁的伦理选择使他彻底失去了自由,被构建了双重伦理身份: 既是专制政府的间谍又是帮助哈尔丁的革命者。这两种伦理身份相互矛盾,给拉祖莫夫带来了身份危机和道德危机。对于拉祖莫夫来说,这两种伦理身份都是他所不认同的: 首先,专制政府对哈尔丁的处决和对拉祖莫夫的利用使拉祖莫夫看到了政治的黑暗,他既对哈尔丁充满愧疚也对自己的政治选择产生了怀疑。其次,他并不认同哈尔丁和革命者的革命理想,拉祖莫夫认为暴力革命将使俄罗斯陷入无序状态。拉祖莫夫在这两种伦理身份下不得不忍受心理和生理的双重折磨,他想尽一切办法希望能摆脱这两种身份。另外,作为特工,拉祖莫夫被派往日内瓦深入革命圈,拉祖莫夫并没有获得

独裁者的信任,由于政府的不信任,拉祖莫夫时常感到焦虑不安和痛苦。而 革命者对拉祖莫夫的友善态度让他既愧疚又厌恶。作为双面间谍,他既要与 革命者保持往来又要面对哈尔丁的家人,双重身份使他不得不编造一个又一 个的谎言。而在他的内心深处,对哈尔丁的愧疚和恨意使他备受煎熬,他的 身体也因此经常处于病痛之中。

哈尔丁毁掉的不仅是拉祖莫夫唯一拥有的那种孤独而又艰苦的生活,更 重要的是他所代表的政治暴力使得拉祖莫夫陷入了一种极其痛苦的道德两难 境地。在哈尔丁所代表的"无法无天的革命暴政"和米库林所代表的"无法 无天的专制暴政"的双重挤压之下(Conrad 71),拉祖莫夫别无选择,在出 卖他人的同时他也使自己成为了"暴政的奴仆"(Raval 141)。拉祖莫夫既 不认同暴力革命,又憎恨专制政治的残暴。他既为流亡者所误解,又为当局 所怀疑。他在任何一方都得不到真正的安宁,而任何一方又都在拉拢他。他 好像是被"一种不可抗拒的力量"推促着,"被驱使"到日内瓦完成了一项"不 可能完成的任务"(Conrad192)。

拉祖莫夫难以解决自身的身份危机和道德危机,他再次面临伦理两难: 负重前行还是赎罪。选择继续维持双面间谍的身份意味着失去表达自己真实 的感情的机会和构建新身份的可能,拉祖莫夫不得不活在无数的谎言和对哈 尔丁无尽的愧疚之中; 而选择坦白和赎罪必然会失去现在所拥有的一切, 还 会遭受革命者报复和哈尔丁家人的怨恨,极有可能付出生命的代价。拉祖莫 夫在这种伦理困境中饱受身心的痛苦和折磨难以做出选择, 他深知无论自己 作何选择都难以摆脱悲剧命运。

#### 三、罪与罚——道德方向的迷失与回归

随着告密事件的发展,拉祖莫夫的伦理身份变得复杂且相互矛盾。拉祖 莫夫无法对他的伦理身份产生真正的认同,因此处于持续的身份焦虑中。在 日内瓦, 拉祖莫夫无法构建一个合理的、连贯的伦理身份, 两种身份带来的 不可调和的冲突使得拉祖莫夫渴望自由和独立、渴望道德救赎。在圣彼得堡 的拉祖莫夫曾经试图通过写一篇文章来弥补他的伦理身份缺失, 在日内瓦, 他同样通过写作补足自己的伦理身份。拉祖莫夫早期的文章与俄罗斯的现实 是不一致的,拉祖莫夫在日记中假定了一种连贯的身份感,而在日内瓦,双 面间谍拉祖莫夫无法建构一个合理、连贯的伦理身份。拉祖莫夫的两种矛盾 的伦理身份使他几乎被撕裂了,他无法持续扮演两种对立的角色,无法承受 伴随两种身份的痛苦、内疚和焦虑。

拉祖莫夫的伦理身份是模糊的和碎片化的,是一种政治残留,拉祖莫夫 强烈地感觉到他的道德人格受到专制政府和革命者这些不法势力的支配。拉 祖莫夫对两种政治都缺乏忠诚, 无论是支持革命推翻俄罗斯政府的运动, 还 是防止当局被推翻,拉祖莫夫都缺乏对这两种意识形态的真正认同。拉祖莫 夫就像是一个"被上帝完全抛弃的人"(Conrad 250)。他的遭遇既体现了政治暴力对于个体存在的毁灭性影响,也体现了现代人的自我与社会的冲突以及由此导致的道德方向感的丧失。他现在的处境是"一切都抛弃了他——希望、勇气、信任,他的心就像是突然间倒空了"。对于拉祖莫夫来说,"一切都消失了",他的存在是"一个巨大的空白"(Conrad 268)。

在与革命者短暂的和谐相处中,拉祖莫夫得以稍稍放松。但他始终无法面对哈尔丁的母亲和妹妹,面对她们友善的态度,拉祖莫夫感到矛盾、自责和懊悔。他知道,"日复一日,如果没有一种道德抗衡的力量",自己是"无法支撑下去的"(Conrad 194)。他醒着的时候感到孤独,而睡梦中"一种异乎寻常的道德孤独感"也像幽灵一样地死死的缠着他,(Conrad 256)苦涩的爱情与无尽的悔恨让他觉得自己的存在仿佛是一个谎言。他急需一次彻底的忏悔和坦白。这种坦白既是一次心灵的炼狱之旅,更意味着一种伦理身份的重构。惟有如此,他才能摆脱"自责"和"那谎言的牢笼"(Conrad 299),才能摆脱"往事中的傀儡身份"(Conrad 48)和那"痛苦而自我否定的生活"(Conrad 296)。在博雷尔城堡,拉祖莫夫凝视栏杆,思考着已褪色的自由的记忆,当拉祖莫夫发现除了坦白没有其他方式可以让他获得内心的平和、自由和救赎时,他做出了向哈尔丁小姐忏悔和向革命者坦白的伦理选择。

拉祖莫夫对娜塔莉的忏悔代表着与熟悉的政治和浪漫叙事的决裂,他的忏悔切断了他与其他人所建立的所有联系。通过承认背叛了哈尔丁,他证明了自己对革命者和当局来说都是无用的和不值得信任的,并且拒绝接受一个矛盾的伦理身份。拉祖莫夫最后的供词是自杀性的,他完成了书面文书,等到午夜走进了暴风雨中。所有的一切都指向了拉祖莫夫的死亡,但忏悔并没有摧毁拉祖莫夫的身体,拉祖莫夫在革命者的报复中存活了下来。

拉祖莫夫的忏悔是一种自我清空,在最后的陈述中,拉祖莫夫强调了他的忏悔自愿性和忏悔带给他的自由: "今天,我得到了内心宁静,我使自己从谎言和悔恨中解脱出来,独立于世界上的每一个人"(Conrad 368)。拉祖莫夫强调他与所有关系和意识形态的疏远,在政治和历史中独立于所有人。拉祖莫夫被革命者施暴致残,永远失去了听觉,但拉祖莫夫坚强的存活了下来,远离了政治、解构了他人构建的伦理身份。拉祖莫夫活下来了,但他只能保持沉默并依赖特克拉,娜塔莉也放弃了她早期的理想主义并原谅了拉祖莫夫。拉祖莫夫通过忏悔与赎罪展现了构建新的伦理身份的可能性。

在拉祖莫夫对革命者坦白之后,他受到了惩罚,但他并没有被周围的人抛弃。当他被双面密探尼基塔击聋双耳,继而又被电车撞倒之后,流亡者特拉克抢步上前将他扶起,并对围观的行人说道: "这个年轻人是俄国人,我是他的亲人"(Conrad 305)。特拉克救了他并将他带到俄罗斯南部照顾他、帮助他康复。革命者敬佩拉祖莫夫赎罪的勇气,把他的忏悔看作是一种勇敢

而可敬的行为,哈尔丁小姐认为拉祖莫夫是暴行的受害者,他们最后都原谅 了拉祖莫夫,拉祖莫夫最终摆脱了隔阂,融入了社会。拉祖莫夫通过坦白实 现了自我独立, 重构了自己的伦理身份。

社会伦理环境决定社会道德方向,俄罗斯特殊的伦理环境将拉祖莫夫 带入了极端的伦理困境,拉祖莫夫身上集中体现了政治环境导致的政治和道 德不可调和的冲突,不论拉祖莫夫做何选择,都将导致悲剧。正如康拉德在 《独裁与战争》中描述的俄罗斯,这个国家的政治秩序是压倒一切的存在。 俄罗斯被视为一种堕落、一个深渊、一种毁灭元素。她不是一片空虚,她是 东西方之间一道巨大的鸿沟;这是一个无底深渊,吞噬了每一个仁慈的希 望,每一个对个人尊严、自由、知识的渴望,每一个内心崇高的愿望,每一 个良心救赎的低语。¹俄罗斯充满了意识形态斗争,改革还是革命,学习西方 还是抵制西方、俄罗斯社会环境中极端的意识形态斗争决定了个人所面临的 极端的伦理选择。

拉祖莫夫的悲剧是注定的, 他无法摆脱社会伦理环境带来的极端的伦理 选择,拉祖莫夫迷失了道德方向,无论他做何选择,都将被带入极端的伦理 困境。社会政治秩序的冲击使得拉祖莫夫无法做出准确的道德判断,只能通 过一次又一次得伦理选择才能找回道德方向。正如安德烈·布萨(Andrzei Busza) 所观察到的: 拉祖莫夫的悲剧在于, 他生活在一个给其成员带来极端 困难的道德问题的社会中,同时又混淆了他们的道德方向。2 拉祖莫夫的悲剧 集中体现了专制政治给个体带来的道德危机,个体在其所处的极端情况下几 乎没有可能做出一劳永逸的符合多重价值需求的伦理选择,他永远面临悖论 和两难。

#### **Works Cited**

Armstrong, Paul. "Conrad's Contradictory Politics: The Ontology of Society in Nostromo." Twentieth Century Literature 31 (1985): 1-21.

—. "Cultural Differences in Conrad and James: Under Western Eyes and The Ambassadors." Yearbook of Research in English and American Literature 12 (1996): 143-162.

Busza, Andrzej. "Rhetoric and Ideology in Conrad's Under Western Eyes." Joseph Conrad: A Commemoration. New York: Macmillan, 1976, 105-118.

约瑟夫·康拉德:《在西方的注视下》,许志强译。杭州:浙江文艺出版社,2015年。

[Conrad, Joseph. Under Western Eyes, translated by Xu Zhiqiang. Hangzhou: Zhejiang Literature and Art Publishing House, 2015.]

Conrad, Joseph. Fiction of Joseph Conrad. Oxford: Oxford UP, 1999.

参见 Joseph Conrad, "Autocracy and War." In Notes on Life and Letters, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1925: 100-101.

参见 Andrzej Busza, "Rhetoric and Ideology in Conrad's Under Western Eyes." Joseph Conrad: A Commemoration, New York: Macmillan, 1976: 111-112.

- -.. "Autocracy and War." In Notes on Life and Letters. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 1925.
- Erdinast-vulcan, Daphna. "The Conradian Subject-in-Process: The Question of Ethics in *Under Western Eyes*." *Under Western Eyes*. Amsterdam: Brill Press, 2011. 95-105.
- —. "On the Edge of the Subject: The Heterobiography of Joseph K. Conrad." *Genre-Forms of Discourse and Culture* 28 (1995): 303-322.
- Hollander, Rachel. "Thinking Otherwise: Ethics and Politics in Joseph Conrad's Under Western Eyes." Journal of Modern Literature 38 (2015): 1-19.

Knowles, Owen, Gene Moore. Oxford Reader's Companion to Conrad. Oxford: Oxford UP, 2000.

O. Lovejoy. *The Great Chain of Being, A Study of the History of an Idea*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard UP, 1942.

宁一中: 《康拉德学术史研究》。南京: 译林出版社, 2014年。

[Ning Yizhong. A Study on Conrad's Academic History. Nanjing: Yilin Publishing House, 2014.]

龙瑜宬: "《在西方目光下》中的俄罗斯", 《外国文学评论》2(2016): 131-147。

[Long Yucheng. "Russia in the Under Western Eyes." Foreign Literature Review 2 (2016): 131-147.]

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

- ——: "文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语",《外国文学研究》1(2010):12-22。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2010): 12-22.]

### 《棉被》中人物的伦理困境与伦理选择

# The Ethical Predicament and Ethical Selection of Characters in Katai Tayama's Novel *Futon*

### 杨 建 (Yang Jian)

内容摘要:日本"私小说"代表作家田山花袋在《棉被》中书写了主人公爱而不可得的伦理苦闷和欲罢不能的伦理困境,这种伦理苦闷和伦理困境源于小说特定的伦理环境,即明治末期日本社会表层性苦闷之下的情感乃至信仰危机,人们在伦理问题上疑惑不定,也源于个体欲望与社会伦理道德规范之间的剧烈冲突。时雄饱受煎熬,其越界伦理选择已触及人类道德底线。但时雄的伦理意识最终回归,理性意志战胜非理性意志,他走出伦理身份混乱,尽了一个成年男人、一个有妇之夫、一名长辈、一位师尊对19岁年轻未嫁女孩应有的保护责任。

关键词: 田山花袋; 《棉被》; 伦理困境; 伦理冲突; 伦理选择 作者简介: 杨建, 华中师范大学文学院教授、国际文学伦理学批评研究中心 研究员、湖北文学理论与批评研究中心研究员, 主要研究 20 世纪西方文学、 东方文学、东方美学。

**Title:** Ethical Predicament and Ethical Selection of Characters in Katai Tayama's Novel *Futon* 

Abstract: Katai Tayma, a representative writer of Japanese I-Novel, described the protagonist's ethical anguish of love but not being able to get and the ethical predicament of trying to stop but cannot in *Futon*. Such ethical anguish in love affairs and ethical predicament were caused by the ethical environment in the late Meiji Period. With violent conflicts between individual desire and social ethics, the common Japanese were under the crisis of emotion and belief covered by the superficial social depression and felt confused on ethical issues during that period. Tokio was suffering, and his transgressive ethical selection had touched the moral bottom line of human being. But finally, his ethical consciousness returned, his rational will triumphed over the irrational will, he was liberated from the ethical identity confusion, fulfilling the protection responsibility that an adult man, a married husband, an elder and a teacher should have for a 19-year-old young unmarried girl.

**Keywords:** Tayama Katai; *Futon*; ethical predicament; ethical conflict; ethical selection

Author: Yang Jian is Professor at the School of Chinese Language and Literature, Central China Normal University (Wuhan 430079, China), Research Fellow of International Ethical Literary Criticism Research Center and Hubei Literary Theory and Criticism Research Center (Wuhan 430079, China). Her research areas are 20th century Western literature, Eastern literature and Eastern aesthetics (Email: yangjian64@163.com).

"私小说"(I-Novel)是日本大正年间产生的一种独特的小说样式,在日本文学史上具有举足轻重的地位和影响。有人认为,"'私小说'理论家们指出了作家的主体性,作家坦露自我的真诚,描写身边琐事的可行性,小说对社会的超越性"(王向远,"中国现代文艺理论"70)。该总结遗漏了"私小说"理论很重要的一个方面,即"私小说"既具有对社会的超越性,又具有伦理维度。岛村抱月曾在"代序:论人生观上的自然主义"一文中指出,现在是疑惑不定的忏悔的时代,作家应该凝视自己,暴露并忏悔自己的丑恶。日本私小说作家"一味在自我的心灵内部'反刍着罪的意识'(伊藤整语),(……)私小说的这种文体要求把自我的行为和心境真实坦率地加以暴露(日本人称为'告白'),它本身就具有忏悔或忏悔录的某些特定"(王向远,"文体与自我"5)。这也说明"文学是特定历史阶段人类社会的伦理表达形式,文学在本质上是关于伦理的艺术"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》13)。

许多学者认为日本"私小说"代表作家田山花袋的《棉被》(1907)是"私小说"的开山之作,但中国学界对它的研究却非常薄弱,只有几篇文章粗浅地谈到了《棉被》与自然主义文学之间的关系、《棉被》与日本文学传统之间的关系、《棉被》的"私小说"文体特征与写作技巧等。鉴于此,本文以文学伦理学批评方法从人物的伦理苦闷、伦理困境、伦理冲突、伦理选择等方面重新解读这部作品,从而揭示《棉被》强烈的伦理意味,并说明"私小说"作家并没有脱离社会,其笔下的人物具有浓重的伦理银事之中。

#### 一、爱而不可得的伦理苦闷和欲罢不能的伦理两难

《棉被》描写了有妇之夫、中年作家竹中时雄与年轻美貌的女弟子芳子 之间的微妙关系。时雄厌倦单调平庸的生活,也厌倦自己的妻子和家庭。充 满青春活力的上门女弟子芳子的到来,唤起了他的感情和欲望,他想占有她, 但碍于老师身份和道德,丧失了几次难得机会。不久,芳子与一位大学生田 中恋爱,时雄十分痛心,他以师长姿态,串通芳子守旧的父亲,硬是拆散了 他们。当芳子离京回家后,时雄对她的思恋、怀念之情日甚一日。有一天,他来到芳子住过的房间,抱着芳子盖过的棉被,尽情地嗅着那令人依恋的女人味,性欲、悲哀、绝望猛地向他袭来。他铺上那床褥子,把被盖在身上,用既凉又脏的天鹅绒被口捂着脸,哭了起来。室内昏暗,屋外狂风大作。

小说是日本国民必读经典作品。小说伦理主线即一个已婚中年男人的情感危机和他对年轻女性的无望的情欲,以及受世俗伦理约束的烦恼、苦闷和悲哀。故事取材于作家亲身经历,主人公竹中时雄与横山芳子的生活原型即是现实生活中田山花袋与他美貌女弟子永代美知子。小说极力避免虚构而写真实,赤裸裸地告白了自己的隐私,苦闷、感伤、悲哀、绝望构成作品叙事基调。

时雄的苦闷首先源于事业不成功。在他的"郁郁不得志的文学阅历中, 所有的创作支离破碎且至今未遇牛刀初试的机会。他沉浸在无尽的烦闷之 中,青年杂志每月的恶评更是令之痛苦不堪。在其自我意识中,自然保留着 有朝一日成名成家的愿望,但心底里却充满了苦闷"(2)1。他的苦闷也来 自于中年已婚男人的家庭情感危机和生活单调乏味、令人倦怠,干什么都没 劲儿。"他感觉,自己寂寞得近无容身之地了"(4)。他曾经幻想着如何 背着妻子去偷情,以此驱散寂寞。"如果可能,不如重新体验新的恋爱" (4)。"他甚至产生过更加过分的幻想,他想象妻子妊娠之中突然难产而 死"(4)。他就可以续弦其他年轻美丽的女人了。但其苦闷更多的还是来自 于无法确定自己对芳子的感情性质。"难道那样的感情仅仅是一种性欲,而 不是所谓的爱情?"(1)如果仅仅是一种性欲——遭遇中年危机、厌倦家 庭生活的有妇之夫对年轻美貌女性的强烈性欲,只是一种生理需要,无关感 情, 当然不符合社会道德规范: 但如果是爱情, 那就另当别论了, 无论是师 生恋,还是普通的男女恋情,在受到现代文明熏陶、要求个性解放的知识分 子中,其合理性不容置疑。时雄也无法把握芳子那种亲切的态度中是否包藏 了爱情。"年轻女人的心理却是捉摸不透的。也许,那种温暖而令人欢喜的 爱情只是女性特有的自然的表露? 美丽的眼神和温柔的态度统统都是无意识 或无意义的?就像自然的花朵令人感觉慰藉一般"(1)。

从情节发展来看,时雄和芳子的确或隐或显存在着师生恋,只是一直停留在精神恋阶段,谁也不敢越雷池一步。小说一开始就通过时雄的心理活动透露了他们之间的暧昧关系:

那些表达感情的通信,证明了两人之间非同寻常的关系。正因家有 妻小,顾忌社会舆论又是师生关系,两人才没有最终堕入爱情的陷阱。 然而相互交谈时的内心激动和相见之时的热切目光,又的确在二人心中

<sup>1</sup> 本文有关《棉被》的引文均来自田山花袋:《棉被》,魏大海、邵程亮、周祥仑译(上海:复旦大学出版社,2013年)。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

潜置了狂烈的暴风骤雨。一旦遇见适当的机会,那般心灵风暴必将毁坏一切关系——包括夫妻、亲友、道德和师徒。至少他相信会如此。(1)

周围的人也敏感地觉察出这师徒二人之间关系十分密切,显然超出了师生之谊(11)。最敏感的人应该是时雄的夫人,她本来并未提出异议,甚至没有一点不满迹象,但现在也有些紧张和妒忌了,有时还会冷言冷语,特别是看到丈夫为芳子的事失魂落魄时。而妻子娘家的亲戚间,早已如临大敌地开始追究了。

从芳子的言行中,我们也能看到年轻女子有意无意间抛撒的青春、美丽、暧昧和受到压抑的性苦闷。芳子"华贵的嗓音,艳美的身姿,与时雄以往的寂寞生活形成了何等对照!"(8)时雄突然联想到哈普特曼的剧作《寂寞的人》(The Lonely People),从主人公约翰内斯·福凯拉特的心事和悲哀中找到了知音。

在时雄眼中,发妻可谓一无所有,只有旧式盘髻,泥鸭步式和温顺 贞节。发妻最大的满足不外乎生儿育女,她不会跟随夫君,像美丽的新 派娇妻那样相拥依偎着散步,也不会在探亲访友时流畅自如地与人交谈,甚至没有兴趣读自己耗尽心血写出的小说,与夫君的苦闷、烦闷更可谓 风马牛不相及。时雄不由地心中呼喊:"孤独哇!"他像《寂寞的人》约翰内斯一样,深切感受到发妻的毫无意义。(7)

他甚至感到自己连《寂寞的人》中的约翰内斯也不如。芳子的到来,照亮了中年男人时雄的生活。"那时髦、新派的美丽女弟子'先生''先生'地叫着,时雄放佛变成了世上受人景仰的伟人,他无法不为之而心动"(8)。

小说有许多地方描写了芳子艳丽的装束、迷人的表情、崇拜的眼光、可爱的言谈。"年轻女孩儿的内心憧憬着色彩斑斓的恋情物语,富于表情的眼睛闪烁着深不可测的光辉"(3)。小说还特别提到她给时雄写的一封厚厚的哭诉衷肠的信,这封信引起时雄非分之想。还有一次是发生在此事两个月之后的一个春夜二人在芳子住处见面的情形,当时没有其他人在场,芳子浓妆艳抹,在和导师讲话时的表情令人难以抗拒:

就那么直勾勾地望着时雄的脸。真的是美艳绝伦!面对芳子勾魂消魂般的一瞥,时雄却没出息地心中怦怦跳。片言只语,两人谈的只是普通话题却又心照不宣,都知晓这平凡的故事其实包含着并不平凡的内容。此时,倘若再接着交谈十五分钟,谁知将会出现怎样的状况?芳子富于表情的眼睛闪烁着光辉,语言文雅,一副非同寻常的态度。

"今夜的芳子怎么这样漂亮?"

时雄有意若无其事地说。

- "什么?哦,刚刚洗过澡。"
- "这胭脂怎么也这么白?"
- "您说什么呢? 先生!" 芳子笑得弯下了身体,一副娇媚的姿态。 (11-12)

时雄的苦闷还来自于他不知如何应对芳子已经出现的新恋情。当田中出现时,他方寸大乱,心中郁闷不已,仿佛真的被人夺去所爱。时雄虽然也感到"看来,我和她真的没希望了。自己真蠢。三十六岁了还有三个孩子,竟做那般非分之想。可是〔……〕可是〔……〕"(1)就是放不下。"'总之错过了机会,她已名花有主!'他一边走一边歇斯底里地喊道。同时用手揪着自己的头发"(2)。

他无法安心工作。"可两三天来,头脑里乱麻一般,实在是写不下去。写了一行便停下来,思前想后,再写一行,又停下来。始终处于这样的状态之中。头脑里浮现的,总是支离破碎的思绪,时时表现为一种猛烈、偏激或绝望"(3)。他没有勇气读书也没有勇气写作,在秋雨的阴凉中体验着寂寞的苦闷和苦涩的滋味,感到那种不争气的命运始终压迫着自己,这便想起屠格涅夫所谓的局外人或多余人!脑海里总是浮现出屠格涅夫小说主人公虚幻无常的一生。

时雄陷入欲罢不能的伦理困境。他寂寥不堪,中午也说要喝酒,喝得红头赤脸,然后乱发脾气,甚至醉倒在厕所里。"混蛋!他自言自语地说,他妈的爱情还有师生之别,真受不了"(20)。他躺在大树根部的地面上,亢奋的精神状态,奔放的激情和悲哀的快感,某种力量发展到了极致。他为痛切的嫉妒所苦恼,又要在冷漠中将自己的状态客观化。"热烈的情思和冷僻客观的批判,像线绳一样牢固地纠合在一起,呈现出一种异样的精神状态"(21)。

#### 二、个体欲望与社会伦理道德规范之间的冲突

明治时期,日本国内欧化主义和国粹主义相互角力,推动了日本近代化进程。日俄战争之后,日本开始逐步跻身现代国家之列,但各种东西方思想的冲突,各种新旧理念的纠葛,那所谓"看得破,忍不过,想得到,求不得"的人生痛苦定义,仍然在人们的心中激烈地碰撞。日本传统的伦理体系、特别是家庭伦理受到巨大冲击,一种绝对自由的、个人至上的近代伦理思想正在悄然滋生,但传统伦理道德观念仍然非常强大,两股力量的张力造成日本近代知识分子矛盾分裂的人格。《棉被》中主人公时雄爱而不可得的伦理苦闷和欲罢不能的伦理困境,其个体欲望与社会伦理道德规范之间的冲突,显露出明治末期日本社会表层性苦闷之下情感乃至信仰的危机,人们在伦理道

德问题上的疑惑不定。

时雄就是个新旧交替时期的人物,既新派,又守旧。他受到欧洲近代文明的影响,阅读了屠格涅夫、哈普特曼、莫泊桑等许多作家的作品,自我意识、自由意志和个性解放思想开始萌动,但封建思想也根深蒂固。比如他的女性观就充满矛盾,在明治时代的"新女性"和传统女性之间游弋不定:

他感觉如今的女学生与自己恋爱时代的女学生,气质上发生了很大的变化。当然事实上,从主义上或趣味上讲,时雄又十分喜爱、欣赏这样的女学生气质。在昔日的教育环境中孕育出来的女性,如何堪当明治时代的男儿之妻? 时雄历来主张,女子当自立,女性亦应具有充分的意志力。他也在芳子面前时常鼓吹自己的主张。然而,真的面对如此新派、时髦的实行者时,他却不由自主地皱起了眉头。(28)

时雄看到社会日渐进步,女学生已然成为社会一景。"如今已很难找见自己恋爱那个时代的窈窕淑女。(……)谈恋爱,说文学,讲政治,已全然没有过去的旧式姿影。他觉得所有这些,与自己都永久地那般遥远"(2)。但在当初是否接受芳子为徒的问题上,他却表现得非常守旧,这恐怕是他深藏在骨子里的东西。当他收到芳子那封洋溢着崇拜之情的手简后,便连篇累牍地写了回信,"手简里写到,女孩子涉足文学是卤莽的,女人生理上应尽人母之义务,而处女成为文学家更是一种危险。时雄不厌其烦地述说着,有时文辞近乎詈骂"(5)。时雄时常用这些话教导芳子:

"如今的女孩子必须实现自我的觉醒。不能像过去的女人那样充满依赖心。正如苏德曼小说中的玛格达所言,女人不可懦弱到仅仅由父亲手中移到丈夫手中。日本新女性必须学会用自己的头脑思考,且按照自己的想法行事。"说到这里,他又例举了易卜生的娜拉和屠格涅夫的叶莲娜,说明俄国、德国的妇女具有丰富的意志和感情。时雄接着说道,"然而所谓的自觉中,理应包含自省的要素,因而不能过度地滥用意志和自我,必须意识到、自己要对自己的行为负完全的责任。" (10)

时雄在这些教导里用到"新女性""自我觉醒""丰富的意志和感情"等新名词,这些都是当时日本社会里的新思想。这些教导对于芳子而言宛若圣旨,景仰之情愈加高涨。她甚至感觉先生的这番话,比基督教的教义更自由更权威。可是,"然而"后面所谈到的问题却令人困惑不解,到底应该如何处理"自觉"与"自省"的关系呢?所谓"过度地滥用意志和自我"又是依据什么尺度作出的评判呢?

及至芳子成为自己的学生之后,时雄开始有了多重伦理身份,他既是老师、

监护人、精神上的父亲、"温情保护者"(35),又是暗恋患者。小说多处描写时雄的暗恋之苦,也描写了其道德自省。这是一场理性因子与兽性因子的搏斗,不过这种搏斗是同时发生在老师时雄和弟子芳子身上,只不过对芳子内心的冲突没有正面描写,更多聚焦在老师身上。这里理性是指传统伦理道德规范,而兽性指的是人的非理性意志。他们挣扎于其中,使尽全身力气,难以自拔,最终还是理性占了上风。

我们先来看看时雄的自我审视和揣度:

他是一位作家。应当有能力客观地看待自己的心理。〔……〕退而言之,即便女人真的爱上自己,两人仍是师徒关系呀。自己家有妻小,人家却是美丽鲜花,妙龄少女。两人无法处置这种相互间的情意缠绵。再说,姑娘激情荡漾的情书不也明里暗里表达了她的苦闷么?那真是一种无法抗拒的自然力量。姑娘那是最后一次传递情意,却不愿最终地揭开谜底。女孩儿生来谨慎。怎好再三地表露情感呢?在这样的心理下,姑娘或许是十分失望的。随之,便有了眼下的变故。〔1-2〕

这个变故就是芳子有了自己的恋人——同志社大学的学生、神户教会的秀才田中,芳子旺盛的生命力和激情终于有了真正可以倾注的对象,这也是她的伦理选择,是对于师生之恋不伦行为的有意逃避。她与田中这份恋情纯洁年轻,而全然不同于和时雄在一起时的沉重和甜蜜。

时雄感觉懊恼。"总之错过了机会。她已名花有主!"(2)他一边走一边歇斯底里地喊道,同时用手揪着自己的头发。心情也是一日多变。他处于伦理两难选择状态,有时真想彻底地作出牺牲成全他俩,有时又想"大公无私",彻底破坏弟子的恋情。

虽然在自己的优柔寡断中,两次机会都擦身而过,但他心底里仍旧暗藏着一个小小的愿望,他在期待着第三次机会或第四次机会,希望藉此创造出新的命运或新的生活。时雄烦闷不堪,心乱如麻,嫉妒、怜惜、悔恨,种种感觉汇聚一处,似旋风一般在他的头脑里回旋,其中也夹杂着作为老师道义感,焦虑的感觉似火焰燃烧。甚至为了自己心爱女人的幸福,时雄情愿牺牲自己。于是,晚餐的酒量明显增加,时常喝得烂醉如泥。(13)

三天以来,他一直在与自己的苦闷搏斗,心中有一种强烈的自制力——理性,阻止他在性的耽溺中堕落,有时,他又十分懊恼那股自制力对于自己的约束,因为他总是在无形中落败或被征服。在另一个场合,时雄也发出了同样绝望的声音,流露出自己的窘况和内心的挣扎:

"幼雏怎会钟情于老鸟?自己巳失去美丽的羽翼,无法再去吸引那只幼雏。"想到这里,一股无以言表的强烈寂寞向他心中袭来。 (……) "那被孩子夺去妻子、又被妻子夺去孩子的丈夫,如何排遣自己的寂寞呢?"时雄定定地望着洋灯心中想。书桌上打开的图书是莫泊桑的长篇小说《超乎死亡的坚强》。(37)

他现在的状况和莫泊桑这部小说的基调可谓正好一致: "生活是既可怕, 又温情,又无望。" 他想起了莫泊桑的短篇小说《父亲》,回忆起当时阅读中的痛切感受,尤其是少女委身男人之后,痛苦哭泣的场面。"突然间,一种相反的、抗拒阴暗想象的力量强烈地争斗着。他辗转反侧,沉浸在无尽的烦闷与懊恼之中。时钟已经敲过了两点、三点"(54)。

#### 三、身为人师的伦理选择

时雄身为人师,其几欲越界的伦理选择触及到人的道德底线。首先来看 看当他收到芳子厚厚的信件时的反应:

时雄觉得, 芳子当初来信的意图是十分明显的。他也为此懊恼了一夜, 不知该如何回复芳子。发妻在一旁睡得好死, 时雄几次偷窥发妻的睡姿, 心中产生了自责之情, 只感觉自己的良心处于严重的麻痹之中。于是第二天写给芳子的回信, 便摆出一副师道尊严的模样。 (11)

时雄的懊恼来自于他的私心、怯懦、优柔寡断,也来自良心未泯——"良心处于严重的麻痹之中",在"几次偷窥发妻的睡姿"之后,他终于从"不知如何回复芳子"——一种欲罢不能的状态过渡到"心中产生了自责之情",回归师道尊严。

接下来,我们再看看那天月夜他面对芳子挑逗时的情形,"时雄坐了片刻起身告辞。芳子一再挽留,别这样急着回去呀。可无论怎样劝,时雄都坚持要回去,两人只好依依不舍地送走了那个月夜。在芳子白皙的面庞中的确包含着深不可测的神秘感"(12)。虽然面对芳子的挑逗时雄觉得难以抗拒,但传统伦理道德的压力使他没敢欣然接受,居然跑掉了。

到了四月,春夏交替之际,芳子生病,变得体弱多病,面色苍白,陷入神经衰弱的痛苦之中。虽然大量服用了安眠药,却仍旧无法正常入眠。"无尽的欲望和生命力,毫不踌躇地诱拐着这个妙龄女孩儿"(12)。情欲萌动的女孩儿,如何才能平复下来呢?芳子四月返乡养病,九月再来东京时恋人田中出现,便是顺理成章的事了。

最后,我们看到三天来的苦闷烦恼使时雄认清了自己的前途,与芳子的

<sup>1</sup> 莫泊桑在写作此书时写给洛尔的信中的话。

这段情缘已告一段落,今后的任务只有知难而退,竭尽为师之责,为自己心爱的姑娘谋取幸福。"真憋死人!"(15)他发出了苦闷的呐喊,但他只能作出这样的选择,否则会为社会所不齿。

为了劝说田中离开东京,离开芳子,时雄戴上了伪善的面具。从将来的角度,从男人牺牲精神的角度以及事情发展的角度,总之从各个方面规劝田中返乡。"他感觉自己非常愚蠢,仿佛自己做了蠢事而嘲笑自己。他还联想到,自己曾违心地说了那么多奉承话,为了遮掩自己心底的秘密,还说要为两人的爱情担当温情的保护者,也曾想找人介绍或帮忙谋求廉价的翻译工作。他在心里骂自己不争气,这种好人做不得"(35)。

时雄左思右想,想到了是否通知芳子的家人,把芳子领回去。"他无法忍受为了自己的非分嫉妒,或为了自己的变异恋情,而牺牲自己对于心爱女孩儿的热烈爱情;与此同时,他也无法忍受自己的道德家形象——所谓的'温情保护者'。他同时也感到恐惧,害怕芳子的父母知道后,真的把她带回家乡"(35)。

时雄也不厌其烦地对芳子进行了切实、真挚的说教,他说到精神恋爱、 肉体恋爱、恋爱与人生的关系、有文化的女性应坚守的妇道等。他还痛切地解 说了古人对女性节操的训诫,与其说那是社会道德的制裁,毋宁说是为了保护 女性的独立,一旦男人占有了女性的肉体,女性的自由便将彻底崩溃。他的 说教冠冕堂皇,一番苦心,真挚而热情,和芳子分手前还专门叮咛她"最好 别让老师担心。做得到么?"(37)可是芳子出门后,时雄的脸突然变得异常 险峻难看。他内心里的苦又有何人能知?他自己又何尝不想占有芳子的肉体? 他对芳子的留恋是用任何道理也说服不了的。"芳子的美无以言表,这种美令 时雄荒野般的心灵鲜花盛开,或令锈死的时钟再度鸣响。芳子的出现,似乎令 周边的一切都在苏醒复活。然而,时雄不敢想象,自己又将再度回归到过去那 种寂寞、荒凉的平凡生活中〔……〕他感觉到不平和嫉妒,滚烫的眼泪流在脸 颊上"(43)。我们突然有点可怜起这个男人来了。"斯芬克斯因子从人同兽 的结合点上说明人同兽之间只是一步之遥或一墙之隔"(聂珍钊,"文学伦 理学批评:人性概念的阐释与考辨"15),时雄就是这样挣扎于人性与兽性之 间。最终,时雄的伦理意识回归,理性意志战胜了非理性意志,走出伦理身份 混乱,在对待芳子的问题上,他没有突破人的道德底线,没有充当无耻的诱惑 者,至少,他还有些良心,尽了一个成年男人、一个有妇之夫、一名长辈、一 位师尊对19岁年轻未嫁女孩应有的保护责任。

时雄已经无法履行监督职责,只好劝说芳子将实情通报父母,他自己也写了一封长信,说明事情的缘由。"时雄自欺欺人充当了'温情的保护者'——所谓悲壮的牺牲"(40)。在芳子决定和田中私奔的情况下,他选择了严肃的解决途径——给芳子父母写信,让他们把芳子接回去。这中间有嫉妒和私心,也有担心芳子被田中始乱终弃、失去女性贞操的意思。

回家以后的芳子总要嫁人的,这位神户式的新派时髦女也许最终又回到了传统老路上去,而时雄剩下来的日子又将如何度过呢?我们可想而知。和岛崎藤村的《破戒》一样,《棉被》也表现了"觉醒者的悲哀"。小说中的主人公虽然开始觉醒,已经提到"理性"(reason)、"野性"(wild nature)、"自我意识"(self-awareness)、"自由意志"(free will)等现代非理性主义新名词,在近代启蒙思想的影响下,也想在个性解放的道路上迈出自己的步子,但时代还没有提供必备条件,传统伦理道德观念依然根深蒂固,连他们自己都没有说服自己,在强大现实压力面前,他们只好选择逃避。

#### **Words Cited**

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

- ——. "文学伦理学批评: 人性概念的阐释与考辨", 《外国文学研究》6(2015): 10-19。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: The Exposition and Textual Research on the Definition of Human Nature." *Foreign Literature Studies* 6 (2015): 10-19.]
- 田山花袋: 《棉被》,魏大海 邵程亮 周祥伦译。上海:复旦大学出版社,2013年。
- [Tayama, Katai. *Futon*, translated by Wei Dahai, Shao Chengliang and Zhou Xianglun. Shanghai: Fudan UP, 2013.]
- 王向远:"文体与自我——中日'私小说'比较研究中的两个基本问题新探",《四川外语学院学报》 4(1996): 1-6。
- [Wang Xiangyuan. "Style and Self: A New Exploration of Two Basic Problems in the Comparative Study of Chinese and Japanese I-Novel." *Journal of Sichuan International Studies University* 4 (1996): 1-6.]
- ——: "中国现代文艺理论和日本文艺理论",《北京师范大学学报》(社会科学版)4(1998): 68-75。
- [—. "Chinese Modern Literary Theory and Japanese Literary Theory." *Journal of Beijing Normal University* (Social Science edition) 4 (1998): 68-75.]

伦理身份与空间呈现: 论非类型化谍战剧《叛逆者》 中林楠笙的成长叙事

Ethical Identity and Spatial Presentation: On the Growth Narrative of Lin Nansheng in the Non-typed Spy Drama *Rebel* 

曹雅洁 (Cao Yajie)

内容摘要:非类型化谍战剧《叛逆者》以林楠笙的成长为叙事主线,紧扣其成长过程中伦理身份的更迭,立足于林楠笙不同阶段的伦理身份制造戏剧冲突、引发观众期待。全剧在充斥着伦理选择和伦理身份变化的成长叙事中,采取线性时间流程方式叙事的同时,与影视剧生产的空间艺术相结合,成功地呈现出一种时空并置的成长叙事方式。在林楠笙寻找信仰、坚定信仰和践行信仰的过程中,空间表征超越了作为故事背景的功能,凸显了其作为空间的意义,承载着个体情感的变化,展现出伦理两难的困境,暗示了伦理身份的更迭,表达出林楠笙的"凝视"、"告别"和"传承"。

关键词:《叛逆者》;成长叙事;伦理身份;空间表征

作者简介:曹雅洁,江苏大学外国语学院副教授,主要研究方向为日本近现代文学、中日比较文学、文学伦理学批评。本文系江苏省高校哲学社会科学研究一般项目"松本清张小说的战争书写研究"【项目批号:2021SJA2048】、国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号:19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Ehical Identity and Spatial Presentation: On the Growth Narrative of Lin Nansheng in the Non-typed Spy Drama *Rebel* 

**Abstract:** The non-typed spy drama *Rebel* takes Lin Nansheng's growth as the main narrative line, closely follows the change of his ethical identity in the process of growth, and creates dramatic conflicts and arouses audience expectations based on Lin Nansheng's ethical identity at different stages. In the growth narrative full of ethical choices and ethical identity changes, the whole play adopts a linear time flow narrative, and at the same time combines with the spatial art of film production, it successfully presents a growth narrative that juxtaposes time and space. In the process of Lin Nansheng's search for belief, firm belief and practice of belief,

spatial representation transcended its function as a story background, highlighted its significance as a space, carried the changes of individual emotions, showed the dilemma of ethical dilemma, and implies ethical identity changes, and presented Lin Nansheng's *gazing*, *farewell* and *Inheritance*.

**Keywords:** Rebel; growth narrative; ethical identity; spatial presentation

**Author: Cao Yajie** is Associate Professor at the College of Foreign Languages, Jiangsu University (Zhenjiang 212000, China). Her academic research focuses on modern Japanese literature, Sino-Japanese comparative literature and Ethical Literary Criticism (Email:sooyaketsu@163.com).

长期以来,表现中国共产党地下工作者在隐秘战线上与敌人斗争的谍战题材作品备受观众青睐。此类作品自 20 世纪 50 年代起初登银屏,经历"反特片"、"公安剧"两次浪潮,进入 21 世纪后被冠以"谍战剧"之名,业已形成一种极具中国特色的类型剧。近年来,中国优秀谍战剧层出不穷,丰富了观众的文艺生活,彰显了深度的人文关怀,构建了广泛的政治认同。然而,谍战剧以其高悬疑度和强情节性吸引观众的同时,又因其类型化的制作令观众逐渐产生审美疲劳。新时代下,谍战剧亟需采取新的尝试以摆脱传统剧集重情节重悬疑的模式,以耳目一新的方式构建国家认同、传播主流价值。

《叛逆者》不失为此种尝试的优秀典范。首先,与"宏大叙事"这一主旋律电影电视传统创作与叙事方式不同,《叛逆者》着眼于个体成长,以"微末叙事"的方式,"巧用以小见大的修辞方式去形塑集体价值、传达家国情怀"(程樯 134);其次,尽管该剧自播出伊始便被贴上"谍战剧"的标签,但正如导演周游受访时所说,这"不是一个处处强情节的故事,也不是一个非常类型化的故事"。可以认为,该剧在叙事视角、叙事节奏、叙事方法和叙事内容等方面突破了传统谍战剧的类型化模式,消解了观众对谍战剧的刻板印象。尤其在叙事内容上,该剧的故事核心不在于叙述如何获取情报、传递情报,而是以非全能型男主角林楠笙的成长叙事为主线,紧扣其成长过程中伦理身份的更迭,聚焦于人物内心的冲突与蜕变。可以认为,该叙事内容为《叛逆者》有别于类型化谍战剧的最另类之处。

另一方面,与"可以进入人物的心灵,〔……〕用散文描写或直接刻画其内心冲突"(麦基 238)的文字文本不同,影视剧生产通过镜头语言结合空间艺术为人物的"内心冲突创造视觉关联"(麦基 238)。《叛逆者》在情节推进上,摒弃了通过画外音解说来告诉观众"人物是怎么长大的,他的梦想和恐惧是什么,或者解释故事社会中错综复杂的政治关系"(麦基369),而是在用"用人物选择和动作的形象来间接而不可名状地表达内心的

<sup>1</sup> 参见新丽传媒、腾讯影业、阅文影视 2021 年度发布会,2021 年 6 月 13 日。<a href="https://v.qq.com/x/page/f3252fxaymy.html">https://v.qq.com/x/page/f3252fxaymy.html</a>

思想和情感"(麦基 238)之外,通过空间意象及对前叙场景的空间关照与对比暗示人物选择、故事进展及主旨呈现。

本文围绕电视剧《叛逆者》中林楠笙的成长叙事这一主线,紧扣其伦理身份的更迭,关照影视剧生产中空间艺术的呈现,阐明《叛逆者》的成长叙事方式、空间表征意义及伦理道德主旨。

# 一、凝视: 迷茫中寻找信仰

文学伦理学批评认为,"不同历史时期的文学有其固定的属于特定历史的伦理环境和伦理语境,对文学的理解必须让文学回归属于它的伦理环境和伦理语境中去,这是理解文学的一个前提"(聂珍钊 256)。回溯林楠笙的成长与蜕变,势必要回归伦理现场,在特定伦理语境中理解该过程。《叛逆者》的故事发生的伦理环境为1936-1949年动荡年代下的中国。1936年,国民党复兴社干部训练班学员林楠笙因其敏锐的观察力和缜密的分析力被特务处上海站站长陈默群看中,带回上海执行任务——找出潜伏在上海站的共产党人"邮差"。"在文学文本中,所有伦理问题的产生往往都同伦理身份相关"(聂珍钊 263)。可以说,林楠笙的成长叙事即其通过一系列伦理选择重新定位自我伦理身份的过程。在林楠笙成长的初始阶段,他自我选择了国民党特务这一伦理身份。在该阶段,剧集镜头下的空间表征聚焦于林楠笙的视线,关照了一系列林楠笙"凝视"和"被凝视"的场面,呈现出林楠笙对其伦理身份的迷茫以及对救国信仰道路的追寻。

首先,共产党叛徒王志供出"邮差"的接头地点后,林楠笙奉命监视康可尔咖啡馆并拍摄、冲洗、甄别照片,以寻找"邮差"及其接头人。镜头语言反复呈现并强调林楠笙于监视室和暗室空间中的"凝视"他者行为:监视对面的咖啡馆、摁下照相机的快门、排列暗室里的照片、观察照片中的人物。这种对他者的凝视来源于林楠笙对上峰陈默群的坚信不疑和对任务的绝对服从。同时也隐喻出,面对共产党人这一他者时,林楠笙的行为在其伦理身份的加持下,呈现出作为在权力关系中处于上风地位的国民党政府代表者的权力者姿态。

其次,林楠笙化名助教徐立文,以追求自由的进步青年形象成功获取 共产党人朱怡贞的信任,并在朱怡贞的推荐下接受了组织的秘密考察。考察 地点最终定格在一间照相馆内。在该情节呈现上,镜头语言利用照相馆空间 的特殊性质,艺术且充分地展示出林楠笙及其伦理身份"被凝视"的过程。 聚光灯照射在被考察者身上,考察者隐匿于暗处、通过相机镜头"凝视"对 方,即国民党特务林楠笙在被凝视时,对共产党人"凝视者"的身份一无所 知。这与上述林楠笙于监视室和暗室的视线形成了鲜明对比。在以下对话 中,镜头始终关照"被凝视者"林楠笙的细微动作与"凝视者"操作下的照 相机。 共:知道为什么要你到这儿来吗?

林:不知道。朱怡贞叫我来的,所以我就来了。

共:如果她让你做的事有危险,你会做吗?

林:会。

共:如果像上次那样,会危及到生命呢?

林:如果是必须的,我会做的。

共: 什么样的事情是必须的?

林:如果危及到朋友的生命,或者,在国家需要的时候。(······)先生, 您是?

共: 你不必知道我是谁,我们都是她的朋友。

林:您好,我叫徐立文。

共:徐先生,我们后会有期。(第10集)1

至此,灯光熄灭,"凝视者"及照相机完全淹没于黑暗中。问询中,林楠笙一切言行的细枝末节被照相机镜头捕捉并放大。这种空间印象的置换不仅形成了艺术反差,强化了艺术审美,也推进了情节发展,为日后林楠笙伦理身份的转变埋下了伏笔,隐喻了其作为代表国民党政府的凝视者身份和权力者姿态的消解。

最后,林楠笙真实身份暴露,朱怡贞因通共嫌疑被逮捕。林朱二人于昏暗逼仄的审讯室空间相见。尽管林楠笙作为"审讯者",对"嫌疑人"朱怡贞存在权力上的完全压迫关系,但在镜头语言和二人对白的呈现里,审讯室这一代表暴力关系的空间属性被瓦解。林楠笙并未完成对朱怡贞单方面的"凝视"与"施暴"行为。

林: 我伪装成你们学校的助教,一点一点地接近你,开始打探你的 喜好,和你一起

参加学生游行。我受的伤都是安排好的。可是你,只看到了我神不 顾身地保护你。

朱:这能说明什么呀?只能说明,你就是一个彻头彻尾的骗子。

林:是,我就是一个骗子。〔……〕朱怡贞, 你太幼稚了! 这里是特务的审讯室, 不是你们申江大学的阅览室。我所说的一切, 理想和信仰, 都是为了迎合你、接近你。你要记住, 你和我, 分属不同的政治立场。所以, 你就是共产党。

<sup>1</sup> 本文有关《叛逆者》作品的引文均来自电视剧《叛逆者》(周游导演,朱一龙主演,中央电视台、北京爱奇艺科技有限公司、新丽电视文化投资有限公司联合出品,2021年)。以下引文仅标注集数,不再一一说明。

# 朱: 我就是申江大学的一名学生, 我不是共产党。(第12集)

在林楠笙向朱怡贞的坦白身份和言不由衷的谎言里,镜头语言对林楠笙神 情的捕捉无一不在诉说着其被对方"凝视"的渴望、痛苦与内心的纠葛。可以 说,在审讯室空间内,二人均具有"凝视者"与"被凝视者"的双重身份,二 人在审讯室内的视线与角逐构成了林楠笙成长叙事第一部分的高潮,即,在对 朱怡贞的"凝视"与"被凝视"中,林楠笙逐渐迷茫,因为"伦理要求道德同 身份相符合,即身份与行为在道德规范上相一致"(聂珍钊 264)。林楠笙救 国救民的道德规范和与其当下的伦理身份产生冲突,他开始怀疑该伦理身份、 以及在这一身份裹挟下报国行为的对与错。

在新手特务林楠笙成长的初始阶段,镜头语言聚焦于林楠笙的"凝视" 与"被凝视",人物内心的纠葛通过空间承载以视觉印象呈现与观众眼前。 这也成为林楠笙审视他人伦理身份、反思自我伦理身份的有效手段, 为此后 其伦理身份的转变埋下伏笔。

# 二、告别: 挣扎中坚定信仰

国难当前,国民党政府却屡现投敌卖国之辈,官员贪腐牟利、政府无心 抗日, 林楠笙空怀满腔热忱却报国无门, 在伦理两难的困境中挣扎、蜕变。 伦理两难即伦理困境,它"由两个道德命题构成,如果选择者对它们各自单 独地做出道德判断,每一个选择都是正确的,并且每一种选择都符合普遍道 德原则。但是,一旦选择者在二者之间做出一项选择,就会导致另一项违背 伦理,即违背普遍道德原则"(聂珍钊 262)。选择以国民党特务的伦理身 份退敌护国是林楠笙最初的信仰和一直坚信的报国之路,然而他看到了国民 党政府的腐败与不堪: 但若选择抛弃国民党, 在当时的林楠笙看来便是背弃 了祖国,无法实现救国之志,这显然非其所愿。在该阶段的成长叙事中,《叛 逆者》的空间表征与林楠笙的精神困境相辅相成,有效地呈现出林楠笙所处 的伦理困境以及与过往"告别"的视觉意象。

上峰陈默群投日后,林楠笙难以置信并一意孤行被关了禁闭。禁闭室 内,林楠笙手执刊登陈默群投日消息的报纸,颓然坐于窗口。囚笼似的逼仄 空间映照着此刻林楠笙内心茫然却不知如何挣脱的困境, 而窗口一缕照射进 来的阳光仿佛昭示着前路。前来探望的顾慎言(即"邮差")对倚在窗口、 泪流满面的林楠笙说: "有一点我很清楚,你现在绝不是在为老陈的投敌感 到难过。你是彷徨了, 你现在满心的疑虑, 你担心你的牺牲和付出, 会是一 场空。你怀疑你的信仰和方向出现了错误。从师范毕业投考特训班,就是想 为自己的国家尽一份自己的力量。这个方向,永远都不会有错。( ......) 你 得先从这里走出去"(第21集)。顾慎言的"走出去"话语与空间意象—— 窗口照射进来的阳光——共同指引着林楠笙与国民党、与现有伦理身份的告

别。事实上,这种"告别"意象在前置剧情的空间表征中也早有先兆。

林楠笙为朱怡贞洗清共党嫌疑后,朱与父亲一同离开上海。林楠笙立于漫天飞雪中,点燃了徐立文的档案和朱怡贞的照片。火苗窜动中,有关助教徐立文的一切及其和朱怡贞的过往化为灰烬。雪地中的焚烧场景无疑烘托出林楠笙内心的伦理困境:伪装成徐立文接近朱怡贞、进而打入共产党内部的任务失败,从此与朱怡贞成为立场相对的敌人,亲眼目睹共产党人的坚定与国民党人的残忍,自己与朱怡贞的立场孰对孰错?与此同时,镜头语言营造出一种林楠笙与过往"告别"的意象:立场坚定的爱国女生朱怡贞、与朱怡贞畅聊心志的进步青年徐立文、二人心中所愿的自由与平等。镜头中凛冽的白色雪地和炙热的红色火苗在视觉上呈现出鲜明的对比效果,这种强烈的"告别"仪式感和视觉冲击力烘托出林楠笙此刻孤独、挣扎的繁杂心绪。

"雪地中的告别"意象在此后的剧情中多次出现,并于第29集达到高潮。林朱二人被困并于逃生途中双双中枪。枪声过后,一切声音和色彩归零,镜头自近及远聚焦于漫漫雪地中倒地的二人,画面呈现出听觉意象被完全切断、视觉意象被无限放大的黑白默片印象,勾勒出一幅残酷美学的诗意表达图景。

中枪后,林楠笙告别了上海,于香港接受救治。此次"雪地中的告别"不仅是二人的再次分别,也是物理空间的位移。林楠笙生活空间的位移"被赋予解放性的力量,给人物提供了摆脱日常生活的常规位置的机会"(陈丽126)。香港成为林楠笙的异化空间,让他摆脱了原有的日常隐忍、内敛的行为模式:他在愤恨挣扎中杀死狂妄的日本军人、在精神困境中收听延安电台的广播《论持久战》、在坚定信仰后帮助共产党人传递情报等。在殖民地化的"非日常"生活空间——香港,林楠笙逐渐告别其国民党军官的伦理身份,开始与共产党人并肩战斗。在与昔日国民党特训班同窗、实为共产党人的左秋明见面时,林楠笙主动提及了《论持久战》。

林: 我听了延安的广播。论持久战,说的太好了。〔······〕我跟你说, 我觉得,毛

泽东真的是一个战略家,一个预言家。(······)当时战争爆发的时候, 我就在上海。

左:这几年有太多大事了,印证了《论持久战》的前瞻性。对这场战争的决胜之策,

毛泽东也有非常具体的指导。他指出、兵民是胜利之本。

林:兵民,是胜利之本。说的太对了。上海区出事之后,面对侵略者, 我已经看不

到希望和未来了,我不知道哪一天才是尽头。但是自从听了《论持 久战之后》,我感觉我整个人被重新点燃了,我兴奋得晚上都睡不着觉。 (······) 我觉得我们不但要听,还要认真地研究。(······)(中国)必胜!必胜!"(第31集)

尽管如此,林楠笙的内心仍然焦灼。初抵重庆,宿舍内的一幕充分呈现出此时林楠笙于伦理困境中的犹豫与挣扎。光线昏暗的房间内,林楠笙端坐在床上一下又一下地点燃打火机,在明暗光线的交替中若有所思,视线所及之处为叠放整齐的国民党军服。这一空间呈现激发出观众的视知觉经验:明暗交替的光线、国民党军服的指向意义不言而喻。情境、氛围与故事情节交织融合,渲染出林楠笙面临国、共选择时陷入伦理两难的挣扎心境,他必须重新进行伦理选择。伦理选择是指"对两个或两个以上道德选项的选择"(聂珍钊 267),"往往同解决伦理困境联系在一起"(聂珍钊 268)。促使林楠笙做出伦理选择的契机很快到来。

接风酒会上,在看到军官们欢声笑语、觥筹交错,一派歌舞升平时,林楠笙扫兴地说: "不好意思,我不会喝酒" (第 31 集); 听到同僚对蓝小姐的闲言碎语和调侃取笑后,愤怒道: "她是遗眷,她丈夫牺牲在南京。她为军统立过功,她应该撤回重庆,她应该得到你们最基本的尊重!" (第 33 集)为给顾慎言洗清冤屈,他四处奔走,面对培训班时恩师白老师的提醒"你应该想想你自己〔……〕自己的前程,自己要当心"时,他失望地闷声道: "我入这一行,不只是为了前程。〔……〕白老师,学校教我们,加入特务处是为了报效国家。现在这么做,是报效国家吗?〔……〕活着,总要有希望啊"(第 34 集)。

以上宿舍内的内心焦灼、酒会上的出离愤怒、与白老师的吐露心声等情节细密地铺垫了林楠笙此后与国民党"告别"的经验基础,即重新进行伦理选择的契机。在共产党人顾慎言牺牲后,林楠笙终于决定加入组织,接过代号为"邮差"的接力棒。中共南方局川东特委郁正文在寓所与其会面。

郁: 楠笙同志,接下来,你要面临艰巨的任务和复杂的环境。这项任务的危险性和压力,对于你来说是前所未有的。我希望你能够坚强地承担下去。

林: 您放心,我已经准备好了。(······)今后,我将彻底和国民党决裂, 为国家和

民族的解放,尽我最大的力量。(第34集)

鲜红的党旗下,林楠笙面朝延安方向,完成了入党誓词: "我志愿加入中国共产党。坚持执行党的纪律。不怕困难,不怕牺牲。为共产主义事业奋斗到底。"至此,林楠笙彻底摆脱了伦理两难的困境,完成了伦理选择,更选了伦理身份——告别了国民党人身份,开启了共产人这一伦理身份下战斗

与信仰的新征程。

在林楠笙成长的第二阶段,剧中的空间表征呈现出"告别"意象,指向 林楠笙与其过往身份的诀别。在剧情上表现为:林楠笙的所思所行与国民党 其他官员渐行渐远,最终对国民党政府彻底失望、坚定了共产主义信仰、重 新进行了伦理选择、完成了伦理身份的蜕变。

# 三、传承: 斗争中践行信仰

1945年,日本战败,林楠笙调任上海站副站长,并在与国民党的不断斗争中践行革命理想。这是剧中林楠笙成长的最后阶段,在该阶段的叙事中,空间表征大量采用与前叙景观相呼应或对比的手法,表达出林楠笙伦理身份中的"传承"主旨。

首先值得注意的是共产党人的秘密接头场所——长椅景观的反复出现, 尤其是位于上海某湖边的长椅。该景观在剧中出现的代表性场景可按时间顺 序排列如下:

- ①陈默群投日后,顾慎言和纪中原于长椅处见面。镜头数次关照长椅边草地上白人一家四口的欢乐嬉戏。纪中原离开后,顾慎言回望这一家四口,微不可闻地叹了口气。
- ②战时激烈中,共产党联络站被炸,纪中原可能牺牲。顾慎言于长椅处 孤独地等待纪中原。四周草地上一反前叙场景中的热闹景象,空空荡荡,一 片寂静。
- ③抗战胜利后,林楠笙与纪中原于长椅处见面。此刻镜头关照之处为草地上嬉戏玩耍的中国人一家。纪中原笑道"欢迎你回来"并叮嘱"你首先要保护好你自己的身份。"林楠笙表示: "当年老顾就是为了掩护我而牺牲的。我们有太多的同志,为了邮差牺牲自己的性命。作为邮差,我宁可牺牲,也绝不暴露自己"(第 35 集)。

剧中数次对"长椅"空间的反复呈现,一方面强化了观众的观剧印象、深化观剧体验,将"长椅"意象与"共产党人"紧密联系在一起;另一方面,同一景观的反复与不同人物的登场契合了历史进程的演变:长椅附近草地上的景致由战争初期的白人一家到战事惨烈期的空无一人再到抗战胜利后的中国人一家,该变化暗示并突显了长椅所在地由法租界变成日占区再回归至中国人家园的历史进程。更重要的是,最后一处长椅场景的空间呈现和纪中原的"欢迎回来"与林楠笙的"邮差"话语,不仅是对前叙景观的呼应,还有效传达出林楠笙的传承责任:顾慎言牺牲后,林楠笙以新一任"邮差"的伦理身份潜伏在上海站继续斗争。

其次,剧中将荣将军向林楠笙传递徐蚌会战情报的地点设在戏剧演出场 地——天蟾舞台。作为娱乐、社交场所,《叛逆者》的前期剧情中较多呈现 的是极具西方文化色彩的歌舞厅空间,人们在上海或重庆的歌舞厅,着西式 礼服,品洋酒可乐,种种表征呈现出强烈的殖民空间意象。然而,在故事临近尾声时,背景设定却转向天蟾舞台这一展现传统戏剧文化的本土空间。林楠笙身着中式长衫,手执京剧目录,与前叙景观的设定形成强烈的空间表征对比,表达出中国、中国人在摆脱被殖民地和被殖民身份后的文化回归。林荣二人被置于该空间设定中完成情报传递,所呈现的不仅是任务和斗争的"传承",更体现出林楠笙在新的伦理身份下所代表的中国人对传统文化的"传承"。

最后,林楠笙身份暴露,在躲避国民党追捕过程中落水。获救后,他在斜塘镇做了一名小学教师。剧集接近尾声时,镜头两次展示了春晖小学的教室空间,分别为林楠笙教孩子们唱《送别》和林楠笙独自于教室中产生幻觉。关于前者,剧集播出时便有网络评论林楠笙于教室中的装扮,认为林在用自己的方式——"留着老顾的发型,穿着老纪的长衫,冠着左秋明的姓氏"纪念故人。后者的幻觉似乎也证明了这一点:林楠笙在幻觉中看到了那些业已离他远去的战友,泪水浸湿了桌面。但是,若聚焦于教室这一空间表征,可以认为此处对教室空间和教师身份的强调亦为对剧集伊始时,林楠笙化名徐立文任大学助教情节的呼应。在林楠笙的所有心事都以留白的形式和细腻的演绎呈现给观众的表达方式之下,唯有徐立文在与朱怡贞的交往中畅谈了理想、歌唱了信仰。在学校组织的某次舞会中,助教徐立文与学生朱怡贞诚恳交谈。

朱:徐老师,我真的没有想到,您会意识到这些。……我是一个独立的个体,我只

属于我自己。我可以做很多男性为国家做的事情,甚至比他们做更多、更有意义的事。

林: 你记得《草叶集》里的诗句吗? 我歌唱个人,单一的、独立的人, 发出民主的

声音、大众的声音。

朱:不仅歌唱样貌、大脑、整个形体更值得被歌唱。

林朱: 我平等地歌唱女性和男性。(第8集)

尽管助教徐立文是林楠笙为接近朱怡贞所伪装的身份,以上交谈也确实 拉近了二人的距离,达到了林楠笙的目的,但可以认为,徐立文所述理想信 仰实为当时的林楠笙无法宣之于口的心声。关于这一点,林楠笙的扮演者朱 一龙在访谈中也表达了同样看法。那么,剧终之时以对前置情节呼应方式呈 现的教室空间所承载的就不仅仅是林楠笙对故人的怀念,更表征着他在新的 伦理身份下对革命精神和革命信仰的传承。

这一点也可以在全剧末尾部分得到印证。解放后,林楠笙身着中国人民 解放军军装阔步前行。镜头下,林楠笙的背影逐渐远去时,身后传来熟悉的 声音: "林楠笙。同志,你穿这身衣服真好看。"在与朱怡贞的重逢意境中,情节特意设置"你穿这身衣服真好看"话语,不仅强调了林楠笙所着中国人民解放军军装所代表的伦理身份,也通过对该伦理身份的再次凸显,强化了剧中人物与剧集主题的的信仰"传承"含义。

在林楠笙完成伦理身份蜕变的最后部分,"传承"主题通过与前叙景观和前置情节呼应或对比的空间表征呈现出来,分别表达了林楠笙传承任务、 传承文化、传承信仰的过程。

谍战剧《叛逆者》没有炫目的特效技术、没有装饰性的摄影剪辑,没有故弄玄虚的叙事方法,没有冗长无效的场景情节。全剧立足于林楠笙不同阶段的伦理身份制造戏剧冲突、引发观众期待,在充斥着伦理选择和伦理身份变化的成长叙事中,采取线性时间流程方式的同时,与影视剧生产的空间艺术相结合,成功地呈现出一种时空并置的成长叙事方式。《叛逆者》的空间表征超越了作为故事背景的功能,凸显了其作为空间的意义,承载着个体情感的变化,展现出伦理两难的困境,暗示了伦理身份的更迭。在剧情呈现上,以空间表征承载林楠笙的凝视、告别与传承;在人物呈现上,摒弃画外解说与独白,充分运用"展示,不要告诉"(麦基 359)的银幕创作原理,"用人物选择和动作的形象来间接而不可名状地表达内心的思想和情感"(麦基 238)。全剧镜头语言质朴真诚,故事内容充实细致,演员展示克制内敛,为谍战剧注入了新的生命力。

#### **Works Cited**

陈丽: 《空间》。北京: 外语教学与研究出版社,2020年。

[Chen Li. Space. Beijing: Foreign Language Teaching and Researching Press, 2020.]

程樯: "谍战片的视觉呈现与影像表达——与赵小丁谈《悬崖之上》的摄影创作",《电影艺术》 6(2021): 132-137。

[Cheng Qiang. "Visual Presentation and Image Expression of Spy Films: Talking with Zhao Xiaoding about the Photography Creation of *On the Cliff*." Film Art 6 (2021): 132-137.]

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2014.]

罗伯特·麦基:《故事: 材质、结构、风格和银幕剧作的原理》,周铁东译。天津:天津人民 出版社,2016年。

[Robert, Mckee. Story: Substance, Structure, Style and the Principles of Screenwriting, translated by Zhou Tiedong. Tianjin: Tianjin People's Press, 2016.]

新丽传媒、腾讯影业、阅文影视 2021 年度发布会。上海,2021 年 6 月 13 日。 <a href="https://v.qq.com/x/page/f3252fxaymy.html">https://v.qq.com/x/page/f3252fxaymy.html</a>

[The 2021 Annual Conference of Xinli Media, Tencent Film, Yuewen Film and Television. Shanghai, 13 Jun. 2021. Avalable at: https://v.qq.com/x/page/f3252fxaymy.html]

# 《蝴蝶君》的性别、种族和叙事伦理

# Ethics of Gender, Race and Narrative in M. Butterfly

董晓烨(Dong Xiaoye)

内容摘要:美国主流话语建构性别伦理、种族伦理和叙事伦理,服务于其政治和文化霸权统治。《蝴蝶君》观照华人身份焦虑,为华裔男性气质辩护。不同于美国主流话语塑造的华人男性刻板形象,主人公宋丽玲主动进行性别操演,打破善恶二元对立,表现出华人男性气质的多维性和复杂性。通过戏仿性别和种族逻格斯中心主义,黄哲伦揭露了主流社会霸权,颠覆了东方主义的叙事伦理,表现了华裔美国作家的责任担当和价值立场。但是,在种族伦理语境中,叙事伦理的呈现异常复杂。宋丽玲的变装行为引发了伦理争议,这说明伦理语境产生创作局限性,也影响文本接受。

关键词:黄哲伦;《蝴蝶君》;性别伦理;种族伦理;叙事伦理 作者简介:董晓烨,东北林业大学外国语学院教授,主要研究方向为亚裔美 国文学、叙事学、文学伦理学等。本文为黑龙江省哲学社会科学项目"华裔 美国文学的儒释道叙事研究"【项目批号:21WWD271】阶段性成果。

**Title:** Ethics of Gender, Race and Narrative in M. Butterfly

Abstract: American mainstream discourse constructs gender ethics, racial ethics and narrative ethics to serve its political and cultural hegemony. *M. Butterfly* observes the anxiety of Chinese American identity and defends Chinese American masculinity. Different from the stereotyped images of Chinese males created by mainstream American discourse, the protagonist Song Liling intended to perform her gender identity, breaking the binary opposition between good and evil, showing the multidimension and complexity of Chinese masculinity. Parodying gender and racial logocentrism, David Henry Hwang exposed the hegemony in the mainstream society, subverted the narrative ethics of Orientalism and presented Chinese American writers' responsibility and value standpoints. However, in the context of ethnic ethics, the realization of narrative ethics is extremely complicated. Song's cross-dressing behavior aroused ethical controversy, which shows that ethical context produces limitations in narrative and also affects the acceptance of the text.

**Keywords:** David Henry Hwang; *M. Butterfly;* gender ethics; racial ethics; narrative ethics

Author: Dong Xiaoye is Professor at the School of Foreign Language Studies,

Northeast Forestry University (Harbin 150040, China). Her academic research focuses on Asian American literature, narratology and literary ethics (Email: charlottexiaoye@sina.com).

黄哲伦(David Henry Hwang)的《蝴蝶君》(M. Butterfly, 1986)是一部颇具代表性的华裔美国作品。这部作品获得了西方主流文学界的认可。黄哲伦借此被誉为"美国当前最具有原创性、革命性、想象力和才华的剧作家"(Oliver 72)。但是,这部剧也因为将华人男子表现为"缺少男人味的,具有同性恋倾向的群体"(Chin xiii)而引起诟病。文本引发的伦理争议对华裔美国文学来说极具代表性。一切文学文本都是伦理建构,具有伦理意义,而《蝴蝶君》的伦理色彩尤其浓重,其主要的戏剧冲突来自性别伦理和种族伦理身份的错位。法国外交官迦利马爱上了京剧演员宋丽玲,两人纠缠半生,而宋丽玲的真实身份是一名男性间谍,真相被揭露之后,迦利马绝望自杀。自首演以来,有关这部剧的争论从未停止。评论家从种族、性别、后殖民、解构和东方主义等视角对作品进行多方探讨,但以往的研究多聚焦迦利马,对宋丽玲的关注不多,这说明以往的研究视角大多是从西方立场出发,从中国读者的视角和当下中国的伦理现场出发的评论阙如。

鉴于华裔美国文学对中国国际形象传播的作用,中国学者有必要考察 其伦理意义的时代演变。多维伦理关系构造了文本的伦理张力。迦利马陷入 伦理危机,性别伦理身份和种族伦理身份都被颠覆,产生伦理认知混乱。对 于迦利马来说,宋丽玲是伦理危机的制造者。宋丽玲身处国家贫弱,华人男 性气质被抹杀的伦理语境,却主动进行性别操演,解构了主流语境的性别伦 理规约,同时表现出较强的种族伦理意识。异装、同性恋、间谍等伦理事件 制造了强烈的伦理震荡和伦理冲击,引发读者对种族伦理和性别伦理的思 考。种族伦理同时制造了受害者和施暴者的伦理悲剧。种族伦理充斥着性别 隐喻,衍生出了性别伦理。作为华人男性,宋丽玲在东西方交往中扮演阴性 角色,这使作者的政治伦理观、叙事主旨、叙事的合理性和正当性都饱受争 议。读者和评论家争论作家的叙事用意是质疑还是维护西方社会的伦理秩 序?作者的叙事目的是否实现?作者是否有意引导读者进行文本误读?本文 研究西方主流话语质询的种族伦理和性别伦理规约,探索华裔作家的叙事伦 理,试图回答:华裔文本为何会引起巨大的伦理争议?

# 一、种族语境中的性别伦理建构

文学传达伦理观念,对文本的正确解读需要返回到事件发生的伦理现场。 美国社会的伦理语境具有种族主义倾向。在种族伦理维度中,西方对东方进 行话语控制,将东方塑造成性别化和意识形态化的他者。东方主义话语体制 建构二元论的种族伦理结构: 西方代表富有、先进、强大和理性; 东方被质询为贫穷、落后、软弱和神秘的他者形象。西方话语通过程式化的伦理宣传,建构东方主义的政治伦理和权力体系,以此巩固主流话语的伦理传统。种族问题由多种因素合力引发,与性别的关系尤为密切。种族伦理中包含性别隐喻。东方主义伦理思维化身为性别伦理叙事,转喻为《蝴蝶夫人》这样的浪漫传奇,通过讲述东方女性臣服于西方男性的感伤主义类型叙事,建构东西方的性别伦理结构,以此辅助种族优越论的宣传,维护东西方交往的性政治,这成为西方话语的叙事伦理。

因为社会结构的合法性和社会关系的正义性发生错位,所以政治功利主 义塑造了畸形的价值观,文化帝国主义设置了伦理对立,引发了伦理失序。 在19世纪中叶,中国经济衰落,政治混乱,军事能力疲弱。美国主流文化将 华人塑造为他者,强行施加否定的道德判断。西奥多•罗斯福宣称"中国人 不具备坚强、进取、勤奋和冒险等品质 (……) 中国不适应战争,而且贪图 安逸, 现在远远落后于具有雄性冒险特征的国家"(Roosevelt 319-322)。 在上述伦理语境中,国家关系的伦理隐喻强化和渲染了中国的负面国际形 象,美国主流文学中随之涌现出大量的华人刻板形象。否定性判断建立了两 极伦理评价, 塑造了华人的消极形象, 其目的是烘托富有、强大、英俊的白 人男性形象。发挥伦理隐喻功能的华人形象呈现扁平人物特征。扁平人物表 现"单一观念〔……〕缺乏深度,容易预测、分辨和记忆,通常会表现出类型 化、喜剧化和讽刺性的特征"(Forster 47)。这种类型化的人物形象表现为 两种相反的伦理判断,即"种族主义之恨"和"种族主义之爱",前者反映 的是种族威胁,后者反映的是种族阉割。来自主流社会的两种伦理认知体现 了主流社会的集体无意识,"塑造了替罪羊的虚假形象,还含混地反射出某 种隐喻策略"(Bhabha 68)。族裔刻板形象是具有强烈种族主义色彩的本质 主义臆断,体现的是美国主流社会的东方主义的猜想,帮助美国主流社会排 斥华人群体。

上述伦理判断的出现是伦理语境的产物。19世纪中叶,美国主流社会充斥着"黄祸论"的论调。在开发西部的过程中,中国移民吃苦耐劳、坚毅隐忍,这使他们能够适应艰苦的西部环境,但是华人移民人数的增加让统治者心生警惕。为了维护政治和社会的稳固、宗教和文化的纯洁,西方主流话语将华人质询为伦理他者,塑造了傅满洲这个"体现了东方形象的残酷和狡猾"(Wu 165)的恶的化身。傅满洲系列作品将妖魔化的东方形象深植入西方读者的脑海。性别伦理形象随着种族语境的改变发生变化。为了缓和种族问题,美国政府开始对华人采取安抚政策,随之出现的是"种族主义之爱"的化身陈查理这一文学形象。陈查理被塑造成"模范少数族裔",是主流社会种族伦理秩序和性别伦理秩序的维护者。他能力出众,但心甘情愿臣服于西方体制;他缺乏男性魅力,对西方的父权制统治不构成威胁。

在发挥伦理宣传功能的同时,傅满洲和陈查理的形象的文学价值被削 弱。在中美对抗的伦理语境之下,美国主流媒体塑造中国人物的负面伦理形 象,目的是引发西方民众对中国的伦理抵制,助力和宣传西方霸权。"他者 话语的强制建构就是华裔美国人所面对的'性别奥秘'和社会规约"(董晓 烨 63)。华人男性的形象被塑造为伦理的隐喻——傅满洲的性变态和陈查理 的女人气——一方面引起了西方读者的反感和厌恶,一方面阉割了华人男性 气质。在这样的伦理语境之中, 华裔男性被强制赋予从属型男性气质特征, 追求,却无法获得白人男性的竞争力和领导力,这种权力话语最终形成了华 裔文学创作的伦理困惑和伦理结,也直指《蝴蝶君》中的人物所面对的核心 伦理困境。种族伦理规约引发了性别伦理想象。对迦利马来说,有关西方和 东方的征服与臣服的浪漫传奇是个"古老的故事(……)他们(东方)的女 人害怕我们, 他们的男人恨我们"(Hwang 40)。"东方在骨子里想要被支 配" (Hwang 129)。秉持着这种"国际强奸思想" (Hwang 128)和"'黄 热病',即白种男人对于异国情调的东方女性的迷恋"(黄哲伦 152),伽 利马将宋丽玲当做物恋的对象,将其植入东方主义式的群体幻想。对种族伦 理的错误认知引发了迦利马的悲剧。他浸润于这种危险而具有毁灭性的知识 体系之中,深信"即使我们不英俊、不勇敢,没有权力,但是我们和平克顿 一样,毫无缘由地相信我们都应该拥有一只蝴蝶"(Hwang 16)。秉持种族 伦理和性别伦理偏见,伽利马将中国男性误认为风情万种的东方女子。伽利 马的一厢情愿和执迷不悔表现了西方对东方的无知和麻木不仁。处在文化偏 见和盲视的状态中,伽利马眼中的宋丽玲融合了柔弱、顺从如莲花,邪恶、 魅惑如龙女, 1阴险如傅满洲, 女性化如陈查理等各类刻板人物形象特征。但 具有讽刺意味的是,伽利马对东方文化的"黄色迷恋"不但没有突显他的霸 权型男性气质,反而将他去势为同性恋的"米皇后"(rice queen),即喜好 亚洲男性的白人男性。因此,宋丽玲对伽利马的背叛之所以对他造成了致命 打击, 主要是因为颠覆了后者在性别伦理和种族伦理架构中的优势地位。

宋丽玲是一个前所未有的华人形象。他的出现"打破了长期存在于主流媒体中的华人刻板形象的坚冰"(董晓烨 64)。《蝴蝶君》改编自真实的历史事件,具有历史人物的原型。宋丽玲主动进行种族伦理和性别伦理身份的操演,在东西方的交往中把握了一定的主动权,表现出主体性。冷战中的间谍活动和对自身性别身份的隐藏等伦理实践既是文本的叙事空白,也是文本留下的伦理谜团。通过赋予宋丽玲一定的主体性、复杂性和深刻性,黄哲伦反驳了主流媒体中的刻板中国形象,打破了原本的种族伦理平衡。

<sup>1 1921</sup> 年上映的电影《莲花》(Lotus Blossom)将同名女主人公塑造为柔美、顺从,甘愿为西方男性牺牲的,代表"种族主义之爱"的刻板形象。"龙女"是傅满洲的助手,妖冶、性感、奸诈、神秘,是"种族主义之恨"的化身。

# 二、华人男性的种族和性别伦理实践

宋丽玲这一人物的出现触及西方话语的伦理禁忌。他引发的最大的伦理 争议在于他的性别操演。朱迪斯·巴特勒(Judith Butler)提出性别身份是操 演和文化建构的结果。权威话语设立界限,命名、规范和质询个体身份。通 过被动地模仿和操演被反复质询的身份,主体无意识地将自身塑造为权力话 语的客体。性别身份融合了多元文化建构,随着历史的发展被反复复制和演绎, 最终成为权力生产的帮凶。同样,"种族也可以被操演"(Butler, Bodies That Matter 275)。主流话语建构种族伦理规约,实现权力的制度化、法律化和规 范化。宋丽玲是固有伦理秩序的破坏者,他错位的性别伦理身份超出了生理 学意义上的阿尼玛特征, 1 改变了叙事伦理中的客体化形式, 占据了优势的主 导地位。他的种族身份影响了他的性别伦理选择。他触犯伦理禁忌,解构伦 理密码,最终在充满敌意的伦理语境中,主动进行反伦理的性别操演,塑造 出了具有主动性、流动性、颠覆性和多样性的华人男性形象。这种"流动性、 颠覆性和多样性"(Butler, *Undoing Gender* 34)特征,就是巴特勒所说的"性 别麻烦"。宋丽玲男扮女装这一伦理事件,质疑了种族伦理的合理性,揭露 了东方主义政治伦理环境的荒谬。受到种族伦理和性别伦理霸权的蒙蔽,伽 利马一厢情愿地"与一种幻想的模式坠入了爱河"(147),即使偶有疑惑, 也将其解读为东方女性的羞怯,这种毁灭性的伦理认知最终发展成难以调和 的伦理悖论。

宋丽玲揭露了性别形象背后的种族伦理内涵。"后天的性别经验有可能 会导致自然性别内涵的重组"(Butler, Gender Trouble 337)。性别伦理身份 并非固定不变,而是在特定的历史的、社会的、文化的语境中和一系列的质 询和操演的进程中持续的和反复的建构。宋丽玲的性别操演体现出极强的颠 覆性,解构了性别和文化霸权。在种族主义语境下,"自然性别内涵"在"后 天性别经验"的质询之下被戏仿。种族伦理身份不是既定的事实,而是可以 外化的展演。宋丽玲反复对自身的性别伦理身份和种族伦理身份进行仪式性 的文化生产,这只是主流话语的伦理幻想。他利用京剧、茶道、长发、中式 服装等种族文化符号操演自身的性别伦理身份,为伽利马塑造出符合其刻板 形象的性别和种族伦理身份。种族伦理身份的边缘化和无权化也是相对的。 宋丽玲扰乱西方伦理秩序, 重构了自我和他者之间的道德关系。在他的操演 之下,他者获得主体性,最终在东方主义的叙事伦理中夺取了主导地位,实 现了华人男性的政治现身,由向西方献祭的"蝴蝶"变成了西方伦理体制的 破坏者"蝴蝶君"。因为认识到了性别政治的压迫实质,宋丽玲为伽利马构 建了一个后者向往的东西方交往的浪漫传奇的幻影。"变装具有抗议功能"

<sup>1</sup> 荣格提出人格具有异性倾向原型。"阿尼玛",即男性内心的女性原型,"阿尼姆斯"与之 相反。"阿尼玛"和"阿尼姆斯"表示人的内在特征,与表示外在表现的"人格面具"相对。

(Doane 25)。在文化失衡的语境下,宋丽玲利用自己被定义的缺失,通过有意识的变装秀操演族裔标记,以模仿东方文化的方式来操演性别和操控文化失衡的境地。宋丽玲放大和重复政治规范,夸大欧洲殖民机制的权力,诱导殖民者夸大被殖民者的恐惧、羞耻和臣服。

对性别和种族伦理身份的戏仿也颠覆了东方主义的叙事伦理,赋予宋丽玲圆形人物特征。詹姆斯·费伦(James Phelan)提出三维度人物观,即文学人物具有模仿性、主题性和综合性特征。比照这一标准,宋丽玲的人物形象比以往的华人男性形象更加丰满和复杂。华人男性对西方社会的权力质询并非无知无觉,也并非逆来顺受。宋丽玲的顺服是他运用权力的工具。在宋丽玲进行性别操演的过程当中,他原本的性征发生裂变,成为雌雄莫辨的角色。人物的复杂性加强了人物的模仿性,人物的模仿性与故事主题结合,深刻表现了种族主义的话题。由此,语境和叙事进程赋予人物"主题性功能",人物的静态模仿性特征转变成动态模仿性特征(Phelan)¹。而多维的人物层次引发了读者的关注和思考,最大程度上发挥了叙事人物的召唤功能。

圆形人物的出现是华裔美国文学走向成熟的标志,表明了华裔作家追求创作的可见性和主体性的努力。通过塑造宋丽玲这一圆形人物形象,黄哲伦揭露了种族伦理的压迫本质。宋丽玲的性别操演实践有力地驳斥了长久以来存在于主流媒体中的华人刻板形象,说明东方人远比西方人所认为的更加主动、复杂和富于变化。宋丽玲的例子表明,华人在美国主流媒体中的形象并非是内在的和本质主义的,而是多元的文化建构和在特定政治话语质询下的表演。它既是主流媒体进行霸权文化统治和质询的政治手段,也是他者反抗性别和种族霸权的武器。宋丽玲这一华人形象的出现改变了以往的话语模式和种族伦理结构,促使东西方交往的浪漫传奇发生权力转移,证明华人在东西方交往中有可能成为强势方。

### 三、作者的叙事伦理

叙事具有伦理意味,阅读严肃的文学作品有助于读者重塑伦理和认知图式,进而提高认知的准确性和伦理意识。《蝴蝶君》是对《蝴蝶夫人》这一东方主义浪漫传奇的戏仿和解构。"贯穿黄哲伦的戏剧创作核心的是在存在层次上对个体和文化身份的沉思"(Campbell 105)。在华人男性形象被歪曲的语境之中,黄哲伦履行华裔作家的责任,将复杂的华人男性形象带入大众视野,"将同性恋男子通过东方主义者的幻想建构性别身份的过程戏剧化"(Shin 188)。黄哲伦以变装等违背伦理的情感作为叙事聚焦,引发了读者强烈的情感冲击,促使读者思考深层意识形态诱因。极端的伦理事例说明,在种族伦理失范的环境之中,性别、种族和文化身份的误现荒谬至极。黄哲伦

<sup>1</sup> See James Phelan, *Reading People, Reading Plots: Character, Progression, and the Interpretation of Narrative*, Chicago: U of Chicago P, 1989, 243-244.

拷问西方主流话语中的种族伦理和性别伦理规约,体现出了作家反政治强权 的叙事伦理立场。

黄哲伦将这一极端的伦理事件设置在特定的历史语境,而不是割裂的场景之中,这说明作者力图表现历史中的个人命运,而不是简单的猎奇。戏剧充分前景化了当时的政治文化事件,如越南战争、文化大革命、女权主义运动和法国学生运动等。政治和文化因素提升了剧作的政治色彩。另外,故事时间也是亚裔美国人的政治和文化意识觉醒的历史时间。《蝴蝶君》的出现既是种族意识觉醒的产物,也表现和证明了华裔社会地位的提升。因此,无论从故事环境还是话语环境来看,黄哲伦的创作都属于亚裔美国作家挑战主流话语,质疑族裔语境的伦理规约,置换和彰显自身的伦理价值的一部分。

黄哲伦不但指出少数族裔所承受的文化霸权之苦,还指出东方主义给当 权者带来的伦理反噬。伽利马对宋丽玲在种族、文化和性别上的虚假认知与 现实形成了错位。对自身和他者的错误的身份认知将会引发恶果。伽利马的 失势不但具有个体的偶然性还具有历史的必然性。黄哲伦戏剧化地展示了西 方男性的困境。欲望是人类的本性,伽利马对权力的渴望根深蒂固。当他在 叔叔的柜子里, "第一次发现色情杂志的时候(……)身体哆嗦了起来。不 是因为性欲——而是因为权力"(17)。对少年伽利马来说,权力欲表征为 性欲。伽利马试图占有和操控女性身体和情感,以此来彰显自己的霸权型男 性气质。但实际的情况却是, 在与女性交往时, 伽利马欲望受挫, 传统观念 上的霸权型男性气质遭到阉割。《蝴蝶君》是女权高涨的时代缩影,西方女 性在女权主义的影响之下,变得独立、自信、沉着。伽利马的初恋、妻子和 情人或拥有高贵的家庭背景,或具有强悍的个性。在获得赋权的女性面前, 伽利马丧失了主导权,遂将权力欲望投射在仍具有前女性主义特征的亚洲女 性身上,将东方女性幻想为理想的欲望对象,抵制和补偿他的权力颓势,满 足长期被压抑的男性意识和西方优越感。因此,与宋丽玲相比,他才是那个 对东西方浪漫传奇怀有执念的"蝴蝶"。通过中国间谍乔装女性,欺骗其情 人 20 年而未被发现这个极端的事例, 黄哲伦揭露了文化霸权的荒谬和危害。 一方面,权力并非沿着单向的轨道运行,而是双向度的操作。殖民者与被殖 民者, 征服者与被征服者的心理、身份、权力可能会发生相互转换。另一方面, 文化优越论使映射在西方眼中的东方形象过度平面化和简单化,因此形成文 化偏见,混淆了交往双方对彼此的清晰和正确的认知。

文本的叙事方式同样具有伦理意义。黄哲伦的叙事结构有效地表达了他的叙事内容和叙事目的。黄哲伦是一位具有政治和创作自觉的作家,"一直致力于借用亚洲尤其是京剧的戏剧形式来向西方观众展现美国主题"(Cooperman 366)。《蝴蝶君》糅合了东西方的戏剧创作元素。作家借此追溯和呈现自己的中国文化身份,实现解构东方主义的叙事目的,强调文化对等交往。回忆剧、戏中戏等西方戏剧的叙事结构融合了具有东方元素的服装

造型、背景音乐和角色形象,成为表现政治与文化隐喻的叙事载体。双层的 舞台结构更是有力地指向戏剧冲突,暗示东西方文化的融合与碰撞,以及个 人的迷惘和选择。

伦理语境对创作和接受都产生重要影响。虽然作家试图颠覆西方的主流话语,但读者难免对文本进行误读和误判。作者复杂的伦理立场和文本多重的伦理意义也引发了多维的伦理解读。时代的局限和西方教育背景导致了作家对中国的疑虑和认知空白。西方出版界的审查制度和美国读者接受的意识形态规训同样造成了黄哲伦模糊的伦理立场。他只能进行有限的反叛,小心翼翼地把握被接受和放弃的平衡。性别伦理的突出也削弱了种族伦理的表现,读者的关注点更容易被引导到西方男性气质的问题,而忽视对种族问题的深入探究。宋丽玲的阴性形象也影响种族伦理的表达效果。宋丽玲主动操演"多愁善感"的身份,在某种程度上再次强化了刻板东方形象。因此,《蝴蝶君》受到某些亚裔评论家的抨击,认为黄哲伦并未突破东方主义的再现策略。

《蝴蝶君》还再次采用了失语的东方这一叙事结构。斯皮瓦克(Gayatri C. Spivak)认为底层无法表述自己。故事层的人物关系隐喻了话语层的权力 关系。伽利马是叙事的聚焦者和发声者, 更贴近观众的认知立场, 容易获得 观众的同情。因为受述者的失语,宋丽玲没有话语层的主导性,真实心理缺 场,致使其真实性大打折扣。这再次造成了作者伦理立场的模糊。话语形式 和叙事模式的选取反映作者的叙事主旨,进而影响读者的接受态度。伽利马 叙事者的身份将宋丽玲挤压至失语状态,因此处于冲突中心的华人形象再次 显得含混不清。有关宋丽玲的关键信息成为无从知晓的叙事谜团。对事件的 解读需要返回到伦理现场。受益于中美关系解冻和后民权时代,作家实现了 种族现身,但历史裹夹的个体只能进行有限的选择。人物失语的深层原因是 政治的失语。《蝴蝶君》的原型时佩璞事件糅合了性别、政治、伦理、文化 等因素, 受冷战背景的影响, 产生了轰动效应, 然而这一事件疑点重重。事 实上,中西方戏剧中都有男性扮演女性的传统。伽利马长期在北京生活,对 京剧中的男旦传统不可能一无所知。另外,中国当局始终未确认这一报道的 真实性。中西方媒体对同一事件的差异报导表明中西伦理立场截然对立,中 方的话语缺失意味着真相的难以触及和错综复杂。

华裔美国文学是中西交往的产物,也是西方了解中国的重要媒介。相关研究可以揭示中西话语的对抗和制衡。《蝴蝶君》等族裔文本时常引起较大的伦理争议,大多是因为文本生产的伦理语境的规训、作者复杂的伦理身份、文本的多维伦理内涵、读者迥异的伦理立场。黄哲伦彰显了华裔创作的可见性。宋丽玲这一人物形象打破原本美国主流文学中华人男性形象的失真和符号化特征,将华人男性的性别、族裔和文化身份的问题前景化,驳斥了

西方话语的性别伦理、种族伦理和叙事伦理。作家和读者承担了各自的伦理 责任。中国读者和学者应该警惕华裔作家复杂的伦理身份,挖掘华裔作品的 伦理价值,有意识地培养正面和正确地解读和宣传中国形象的使命感,在与 西方文化进行交流的过程中保持我们的民族自尊心和自豪感。华裔作家应该 正视自己的中国身份, 也应该认识到: 隐喻黄祸的傅满洲, 代表模范少数族 裔的陈查理和冷战形象的宋丽玲,都已经沉入历史。塑造符合当下伦理语境 的真实的中国形象,既是华裔作家的伦理责任,也是当下读者的伦理需求。

#### Works Cited

Bhabha, Homi K. The Other Question: Difference, Discrimination and the Discourse of Colonialism. London: Routledge, 1994.

Butler, Judith. Bodies That Matter: On the Discursive Limits of "Sex". NY and London: Routledge,

- —. Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity. NY and London: Routledge, 1999.
- -. Undoing Gender. NY and London: Routledge, 2004.

Campbell, Karen. "In the Realm of the Voices." American Theatre 1 (2003): 103-06.

Chin, Frank. "Come All Ye Asian American Writers of the Real and the Fake." The Big Aiiieeeee: An Anthology of Chinese and Japanese American Literature, edited by Jeffery Paul Chan, Frank Chin, Lawson Fusao Inada and Shawn Wong. NY: Meridian, 1991. i-xcii.

Cooperman, Robert. "Across the Boundaries of Cultural Identity: An Interview with David Henry Hwang." Staging Difference: Cultural Pluralism in American Theatre & Drama 11 (1993): 365-373.

Connell, Robert. Masculinities. Cambridge, London: Polity Press, 1995.

Doane, Mary Ann. Femmes Fatales. NY and London: Routledge, 1991.

董晓烨: "美国华人男性形象的性别和种族操演", 《北方论丛》3(2017): 61-67。

[Dong Xiaoye. "Gender and Racial Performativity of Chinese American Male Images." The Northern Forum 3 (2017): 61-67.]

Forster, E.M. Aspects of the Novel. London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1993.

Hwang, David Henry. M. Butterfly. New York: Penguin, 1988.

黄哲伦:《蝴蝶君》,张生译。上海:上海译文出版社,2010年。

[Hwang, David Henry, M. Butterfly, translated by Zhang Sheng, Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing, 2010.]

Oliver, Edith. "Poor Butterfly." The New Yorker 7 (1988): 72.

Phelan, James. Reading People, Reading Plots: Character, Progression, and the Interpretation of Narrative. Chicago: U of Chicago P, 1989.

Roosevelt, Theodore. The Works of Theodore Roosevelt. NY: Scribner, 1926.

Shin, Andrew. "Projected Bodies in David Henry Hwang's M. Butterfly and Golden Gate." MELUS 1 (2002): 178-97.

Wu, William F.. The Yellow Peril: Chinese-Americans in American Fiction, 1850-1940. Hamden, CT: Archon Books, 1982.

伦理错位与原型纠偏:麦卡锡小说《路》中的末日 伦理书写

Ethical Dislocation and Archetypal Correction: Apocalyptic Ethics in Cormac McCarthy's *The Road* 

王 薇 (Wang Wei) 王梓钰 (Wang Ziyu)

内容摘要: 当代美国作家科马克·麦卡锡在《路》中构建了一个伦理混沌的末日世界。整体看来,小说主人公父子二人对良善和道德的伦理坚守与黑暗残酷的末日伦理困境构成显著错位,小说在冷峻现实的笔调下展现出超现实的叙事色彩。本文运用文学伦理学批评理论,辅以神话一原型批评相关概念,细察小说中的伦理错位以及原型介入对伦理错位的纠偏效用,谛视小说在主题呈现、伦理反思、观念重塑等方面的末日伦理书写要点。麦卡锡在《路》中通过伦理与原型的双重合奏,促使现代人在涅槃中重建平衡,从伦理层面探寻人类的末日救赎之路。

关键词:科马克·麦卡锡;《路》;伦理错位;伦理选择;原型作者简介:王薇,青岛大学外语学院副教授,主要研究领域为当代美国文学及文化研究;王梓钰,青岛大学外语学院硕士研究生,主要研究方向为当代美国文学。本文为国家社科基金后期资助项目"文化记忆语境中的美国'9·11'小说研究"【项目批号:21FWWB018】阶段性成果。

**Title:** Ethical Dislocation and Archetypal Correction: Apocalyptic Ethics in Cormac McCarthy's *The Road* 

**Abstract:** In *The Road*, the contemporary American writer Cormac McCarthy has constructed an ethically chaotic apocalypse. The protagonists' ethics are dislocated with the dark and cruel background, forming various dislocated ethical choices which are surrealistic beyond McCarthy's realistic narrative. This article interprets these "dislocations" from perspectives of ethical literary criticism and mytharchetypal criticism, and further explores the apocalyptic ethics from the aspects of theme presentation, ethical reflection and ethical reshaping. The article suggests that McCarthy urges modern people to re-establish balance in chaos and find the road of redemption at an ethical level.

**Keywords:** Cormac McCarthy; *The Road*; ethical dislocation; ethical choice; archetype

**Authors:** Wang Wei is Associate Professor in the College of Foreign Languages, Qingdao University (Qingdao 266071, China). Her academic research focuses on contemporary American literature and cultural study (Email: wangwei@qdu.edu. cn). Wang Ziyu is a postgraduate in the College of Foreign Languages, Qingdao University (Qingdao 266071, China) (Email: 634129004@qq.com).

当代美国作家科马克·麦卡锡(Cormac McCarthy)著有《血色子午线》 《老无所依》《路》等系列佳作,曾荣膺美国国家图书奖、普利策奖等文学 奖项。麦卡锡寄情于动荡不安,危机四伏的生活,素以描写暴力血腥的场景 著称。有关麦卡锡作品的伦理维度,学界观点不一。有学者指出其作品"暴 力的泛滥和极端血腥缺乏道德价值取向, 充斥着虚无主义"(Bell 5), 另 有学者认为其作品"富有道德寓意,充满建构道德秩序与宗教信仰的信念" (Arnold 46)。2006年出版的小说《路》(The Road, 2006), 便是麦卡锡融 合末日暴力和伦理救赎的双重书写, 小说的时间设置在末日未来, 讲述了一 对父子在死亡与暴力的边缘艰难求生的故事。主人公父子二人在路上经历了 难以想象的生存危机和伦理困境,经常不得不在生存和人性之间做出选择。 文学伦理学批评强调在特定的伦理环境下分析和批评文学作品,而《路》的 特殊性在于其故事背景设定在想象未来的一个极端黑暗的世界,原有的人类 文明和社会伦理秩序已然土崩瓦解。小说如何呈现父子的伦理选择与末日伦 理困境之间的种种错位?如何看待父子在末日危机之下的伦理选择?他们对 善和道德选择的坚守是否还有伦理意义?在极端之恶的背景下,作家为何塑 造儿子这样一个善良纯粹的形象? 本文拟采用文学伦理学批评的观点, 辅以 神话原型批评概念,对《路》中的伦理思想内涵及文学呈现方式进行阐释与 剖析。

# 一、伦理困境下的"错位"

小说《路》出版于2006年,展现了人文主义与伦理观念双重衰落的后"9·11"时代缩影。后"9·11"美国社会"正经历一个令人困惑的时代,其标志是美国生活中的非道德行为正被戏剧性地揭露于世"(Li 63)。时至今日,经济危机、恐怖袭击、新冠疫情一再来袭,有关末日的恐慌隐伏于每个人的内心。可以说,自"9·11"事件而起引发的新世纪伦理拷问,迫使美国重新寻求、评估、调整自身的伦理价值观。"当传统道德观受到威胁时,人文主义并没有起到预防与阻止灾难发生的作用,人们因此对它产生怨恨"(杨革新52)。作为当代美国文坛的一位巨匠,麦卡锡秉持对后"9·11"时代伦理问

题的关注,通过书写复杂人性以及光辉与丑恶的较量,在对伦理边界进行试探的同时,思考重振人文主义的救赎之路。在他的作品中不仅暴露出现实环境中的伦理错位,还蕴含着纠正错位的种种文本尝试。

善恶冲突下的人类出行主题备受文学书写的青睐,不断重现着人生重大伦理问题的各个方面。小说伊始,父子便被安排在出行的路上,他们的乐观态度与阴暗残酷的末日现实形成错位。最初,父子的物资相对充足,对出行目的有明确把握。"南方"是二人自始至终的追求方向,是温暖和希望的象征。目标坚定的父子在路上态度乐观,儿子身上还留有孩童的特性。他"找到几支蜡笔并在口罩上画了几颗狼牙,一路上走得跌跌撞撞却未曾抱怨"(麦卡锡 11)<sup>1</sup>;在遇到山坡时男人把儿子抱进车筐里,自己则站在购物车后的横栏上,"像拉雪橇犬的主人似的,向山下驶去"(14);两人在路上玩执铁环的游戏,遇到瀑布也会不顾一切地跳下去嬉戏一番。明确的方向感和乐观态度侧面表现了父子清晰明确的认知,暗示他们能够做出正确的伦理选择。

与父子的乐观态度相对,末日现实却呈现出一派荒芜、静寂、邪恶的景象:"彼时,所有食物储备都已枯竭,大地上到处都是谋杀。这世界忽地兴起一大帮当着你的面就能吃掉你儿子、女儿的人"(166)。父子寄托全部希望到达的南方海岸依旧沉寂冰冷,暗淡如铅。然而,面对不容乐观的末日惨象,父子却呈现出与混沌的伦理环境相错位的伦理选择。父亲多次向儿子保证他们会做"好人",不但不会伤害沿途遇到的狗,且即使饿极了也绝不会吃人。当他们在绝境中发现一个充满食物的无主地窖时,父子对能不能在未经允许的情况下拿里面的东西展开探讨。父亲认为"那些人会让我们拿的,就像我们也会让他们拿一样"(125)。儿子的祷告同样表现出鲜明的同理心,他在对地窖主人之死表示遗憾的同时,还提到"如果你们还在的话,我们就是再饿也不会吃的"(131)。可见,在威胁程度较低的生存危机面前,父子能够保持相对清醒的伦理认知,坚持善与道德的选择。

然而,伦理选择之所以艰难,是因为它"常与解决伦理困境联系在一起,需要解决伦理两难的问题"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》268)。越是深刻的伦理困境,比如生死关头,伦理选择越有可能发生动摇或转向。随着生存危机的加深,父子各自的伦理选择从一致向善转而逐渐产生分歧、形成错位。父亲将生存选择置于道德选择之前,儿子却仍然坚持无私、友爱的助人情结。首先,对时空认知的模糊预示着父子伦理选择的彷徨和动摇。混沌之中,类似"离死还有多少天"(116)的问题不断在父亲心头萦绕。"迷失了方向的人会选择哪条路呢?"(104)更是道出父子对自身困境的迷茫。一再遭受生命威胁让父子意识到仅凭良善与道德并不能使他们在末日危机中存活。杀掉挟持儿子的暴徒是父亲伦理选择的第一次转向,在"你死我亡"的

<sup>1</sup> 本文有关《路》的引文均来自科马克·麦卡锡,《路》,杨博译,重庆:重庆出版社,2009年。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

两难选择前,父亲选择杀掉对方以求自保。父亲对偷东西的贼则采取"以牙还牙"的报复策略: "我打算这样把你弃在路上,就像你把我们弃在路上一样"(238)。伦理困境中父子的伦理选择开始出现分歧。"父亲为了保护儿子和保全自身,不得不自私保己,虽不害他人,却也不利他人,而男孩却在道德沦丧占上风时始终秉性向善"(李维屏邹娟6)。在是否要帮助别人的问题上,父子间的伦理冲突加剧,但双方均做出了相应妥协。儿子对父亲无法帮助他人的心态表示理解,父亲也答应儿子的请求向一位老人施以援手。通过揭示父子间伦理选择的错位,男孩的精神成长之路逐渐显露。儿子无法认同父亲对"好人"的阐释,并向父亲提出质疑: "在故事里我们总是在帮助别人,而现实中我们并没有帮助别人"(246)。在父亲奚落不曾向他们道谢的老人时,男孩对父亲的纠正充满人性关怀,认为"你不该取笑他","他快死了"(160)。

"从婴儿到幼儿,从少年到成人都要经历一次次选择最终成长起来"(聂珍钊 王松林 14)。父子分歧的消长反映了男孩个体伦理意识的成长之路。小说呈现的伦理错位既有父子与整个伦理混沌的末日环境的错位,也有父子间自私保己或无私利他两种伦理选择的错位,且与后"9•11"时代的现实错位相照应。伦理混沌中的危机与险恶增强了人的选择能力,也使伦理选择的道德性逐渐凸显。《路》中父子间的伦理错位在善恶交锋与磨合中得以解决,体现了文学的伦理功能和教诲作用。

如前所述,伦理错位的发生受特定伦理环境的影响。随着生存危机的加深,父子间的伦理错位日渐浮现。父亲逐渐抛弃了慈悲为怀的信条,趋向保守的实用主义选择。如果"回到历史的伦理现场,站在当时的伦理立场上解读和阐释文学作品"(聂珍钊 王松林 8),父亲的做法实属求生悖论下的无奈之举。反观男孩始终秉持乐善好施的选择,似乎与整个伦理环境格格不入。麦卡锡的作品倾向于对血腥、暴力以及人性之恶的直接呈现。然而,在其冷峻、现实的笔调下,却蕴含着一些超现实的元素。例如,为何在如此荒芜、残暴的背景下,会有如男孩这般纯粹、善良的存在?在极端的伦理环境下,父子对道德的坚守是否有些"不可思议"?为什么父亲临终前放心让善良的儿子一个人上路,并将一切归结为"幸运"?超现实元素如何与偏向现实的伦理书写结合,进而协助表达作家的伦理观?下文将结合神话原型批评的视角,通过对小说《路》进行"远观",对上述伦理错位进行原型阐释。

#### 二、伦理错位的原型阐释

文学伦理学批评认为,文学产生于人类伦理表达的需要,其动力源于"人类共享道德经验的渴望"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构》82)。文学伦理学批评理论将道德视为"共享经验"的论述,与原型批评对典型模式或本质属性的追寻相得益彰。在荣格看来,原型是"一切心理反应

的具有普遍一致性的先验形式,可以从心理学、哲学、美学、神话学、伦理学等不同方面去理解"(5)。尽管伦理思想与道德评判并非荣格关注的主要方面,但不可否认的是,他对集体无意识或是原型的阐释均呈现出一条伦理暗线。无论是其关注的"宗教、神话、传说、童话还是仪式,都是古代特定民族文化伦理道德观念的载体"(聂珍钊 王松林 126-127),体现出鲜明的伦理取向。此外,弗莱对文学与道德之间若即若离关系的认识,也使原型批评与文学伦理学的交叉融合成为可能。"理论需要不断更新,并在更新中得到完善并用于解释历史、现实或未来的问题"(聂珍钊等83)。本文将以神话原型批评视角透视小说中的伦理错位,探究原型介入对伦理错位的呈现与纠偏效用,为文学伦理学批评从原型象征层面阐释现实、思索未来提供参照。

首先,《路》中的原型意象对小说的伦理错位起到揭示和预言的作用。 小说中的伦理混沌表现为神启世界和魔怪世界的并存。其中火与水作为两个 具有代表性的原型意象,具有双重隐喻意义,表达了"善与恶动态变化,对 立统一,可以互相转化"(聂珍钊等 104)的观点。魔怪世界中,火所燃烧 的是邪恶的异教徒,如《旧约》多玛城毁于大火,便是对伦理失衡和人性之 恶的审判,与末日毁灭紧密相关。同样,《路》中的现实充斥着"光秃秃并 烧焦了的树干"和"烧焦的房子","灰烬在路面上翻滚"(5)。烧焦的、 被雷劈伤的人,以及人类相互猜忌、自相残杀的场景,均与魔怪世界的末日 审判互为映照。然而,小说中随处可见的大火并不完全是地狱的象征,还可 能"意味着神启意象的基本规则"(弗莱 158-159)。"燃烧"不仅有化为灰 烬之意,还可能炼土成金。燃烧中的人也可意指人灵魂的净化,脱离罪恶向 善并得到救赎。同样,魔怪世界中的水"通常指死亡之水,常与流出的血视 为一体,还有深不可没、咸不可饮、令人无可奈何的海水〔……〕而在神启 世界里海却消失了,代之以新鲜纯净的水循环流动"(弗莱 173)。《路》的 世界既有"铅灰色的大海",又有孕育斑点鲑的小溪;既写地狱,又有神启 世界的痕迹,为几子这一原型人物的出现提供了支撑。以水火为代表的原型 意象各自呈现出对立统一的意义,是对小说和现实中的伦理错位及解决的预 言。天堂与地狱的对立以及水火意象的双重隐喻是小说伦理错位在神话层面 的表现。身处天堂与地狱过渡边界的男孩最终与同样携带火种的一家人继续 上路,小说结尾蕴含的生机暗示善意战胜邪恶、错位得以解决之后新天新地 的来临。

其次,原型人物的设置对小说伦理主题的强化以及错位的纠正起推动作用。文学伦理学批评认为文学作品的根本价值在于"塑造模范典型和提供经验教训,向读者传递从善求美的理念"(聂珍钊 王松林 6)。这一"模范典型"便体现在诸如耶稣基督、释迦牟尼等宗教神像身上。他们既是道德观念的集合,又是善美一体的化身。小说中的父子,尤其是儿子十分契合宗教道德倾向。他的身上带有与上帝相似的属性,如道德与美,爱与正义等,使男

孩与宗教原型走到一起。父亲从最开始就相信儿子是上帝传下的旨意。父亲对儿子的信仰是后期纠正父子间伦理错位的关键。他在儿子身上看到了救赎与复活的允诺,因此父亲的现实主义求生法则最终妥协于儿子无差别的普世之爱。男孩的经历与《圣经》中耶稣在旷野接受魔鬼试探的神话¹形成一定程度的互文。如同耶稣通过魔鬼的试探后开始四处传递福音,男孩与父亲在接受末日生存考验之时也将善与道德的种子沿路播撒。男孩与父亲作为原型人物,注定是一种区别于真实性或现实主义的存在,他们的故事由此呈现出某种超现实的特质。"伦理秩序的形成往往是成文禁忌通过神谕制度化的结果"(聂珍钊 王松林12)。不管是父子二人与整个末日环境的错位,还是父子间伦理选择的错位,都突出了他们原型人物的角色,为其伦理观念和行为赋予神谕色彩,对小说伦理错位的纠正以及伦理秩序的重构起推动作用。不仅强化、升华了小说的伦理主题,还为作者自身伦理道德观的传达奠定了基础。

其三,小说的种种伦理错位在复活母题的升华中得到解决。莱斯利•费德勒(Leslie Fiedler)在《美国小说的爱与死》中认为,复活"是为了再次崛起,被浸死或埋葬是为了重生"(366)。麦卡锡将父子共同坚守的末日伦理赋予了如复活母题一般至死不灭,生生不息的意义。首先,父亲之死意味着儿子的重生。儿子在父亲的死亡中得以独立,最终告别父亲找到其他"好人",一同走上末日救赎之路。其次,父亲之死与错位解决大有莎剧《哈姆雷特》中同归于尽的意味。其死后以"呼吸"的形式复活并得以生生不息的延续。父子的伦理选择曾随着生存压力的增加产生分歧,但父亲最终被儿子"净化",并在临终前肯定了儿子的行为,认为"火种一直都在你身上,我能看见"(256),说明父亲让儿子接过的"火种"确是末日救赎的希望。小说最后呈现出的生命之源暗示人类文明与伦理秩序的复苏。至此可见,"南方"只是父子行路的目的,却不是希望,而携带善意的火种一直前行才是希望。《路》中的复活母题不仅体现了文学的道德净化与教诲功能,还为伦理混沌的时代应对后"9•11"信仰危机提供指引。

综上所述,《路》中的原型意象、原型人物和原型母题对小说的伦理错位起到预言、纠正与升华的作用。原型的介入不仅强化了小说的伦理主题,作家自身的伦理道德观也借由原型叙事的力量而权威化。此外,原型所具有的共性特点还有利于推动建立一种普遍的原型伦理,从而在集体层面整合出抵御后"9•11"时代的人文主义失落与伦理道德危机的精神力量。

<sup>1</sup> 参见《圣经新约:路加福音》第4章。耶稣被圣灵引到旷野并禁食40天,在饥肠辘辘之际魔鬼现身前来试探。其一为生存试探,看耶稣是否会运用神力将石头变成食物;其二为善恶诱惑的试探,魔鬼承诺只要耶稣向他跪拜,与他为伍,便会得到一切权柄荣华;其三为生死试探,魔鬼试图引诱耶稣从殿顶跳下,并怂恿说上帝会派使者前来保护他。

## 三、集体原型的伦理意蕴

除了作家创作的需要,小说展现父子伦理行为的意义远不止于此。荣格将原型批评与心理学相结合,认为作家表现原型意象能够"从集体精神中召唤出治疗和拯救的力量,确认一种超越个体感受局限的共同精神结构"(转引自 聂珍钊 王松林126-127)。除了神话、宗教等原型文化形式,对伦理的探寻也是人类共性之一,因此,伦理学与神话原型两种批评视角的结合,有助于在道德与信仰双重缺失的时代激起全人类的共鸣。神话原型批评倡导的传统、共享的伦理经验的回归,能够为现代化的畸形化和片面化提供补偿,其对抗异化、维护人性完整的目标与文学伦理学有异曲同工之处。

就小说《路》而言, 前述的原型呈现, 在揭示、预言、纠正、解决伦理 错位的同时,还具有极强的现实观照和伦理意义,并通过原型的共性特点得 以普及和升华。小说的时空背景弱化了时代界限,一以贯之的荒芜场景模糊 了地域界限,对人性之恶以及伦理问题的暴露则模糊了民族界限。如此,小 说凸显的伦理混沌与错位实则是人类面临的普遍问题。"人类社会正在经由 伦理选择向科学选择转变的过程"(聂珍钊 王松林 32)。可以说,《路》将 潜藏的黑暗根基暴露出来,并将表面暂时的和谐彻底摧毁。彼时所有食物储 备都已枯竭,盗窃、抢夺、吃人的现象比比皆是。如果说自然生物的弱肉强 食是自然选择的结果,那么人类间的蚕食虐杀则是工业理性发展的必然。麦 卡锡对这一过渡阶段可能面临的伦理错位进行了前瞻性思考,并试图通过小 说父子的个案唤起人类普遍的伦理意识。小说对原型人物伦理品质的塑造实 则是作家伦理欲望的投射,父子与整个伦理环境错位的凸显是作家的伦理道 德观与后"9·11"道德危机错位的缩影。父子对伦理道德的坚守被作家原型 化,试图以一种"逐渐增长、符合伦理道德的文雅高尚"净化"令人反感、 荒谬奇怪的野蛮粗俗"(弗莱 181)。小说现实笔触之下的超现实元素,如 山穷水尽时发现的地窖、父子的种种"幸运"、最后收留男孩的"好人"一 家等,都作为父子道德行为的"奖赏"回馈到他们身上,强化了"好人有好 报"的伦理道德观。

作为末日伦理小说,《路》自始至终弥漫着悲凉忧伤的气氛,并在小说结尾设置具有原型特点的悲剧冲突,从而将末日气氛推向高潮。在亚里士多德看来,悲剧的最大审美效果在于"净化"(catharsis),即悲剧可在观众心理引起某种释放感,"通过引发怜悯和恐惧使这些情感得到疏泻"(亚里士多德 63)。这一情感体验同样在《路》的结尾处产生了净化效果。父亲之死是全书悲剧的高潮,父子在一个空旷的十字路口扎营,男人已经预感到自己会死在这里。他躺在中间"不想让任何东西遮住他",身旁是"一些黑色的树木被吹地从东到西平躺着"(255),如同被摆在祭坛上,其悲剧的收场酷似祭献仪式。悲剧的审美效果能够促使读者从悲剧中得到净化与教诲,从而

实现"从审美认同转向道德认同","从审美到伦理"的转化(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值》13)。读者在欣赏悲剧结尾的同时回溯造成悲剧的根源,如科技灾难、资源枯竭、伦理缺失等,这一反思的过程也是实现文学伦理教诲的过程。正如耶稣通过魔鬼的试探,《路》中的男孩在荒原努力存活,拒绝与食人族为伍,最终告别父亲独自走上末日救赎之路。个体的原型化、场景的模糊处理也使得男孩的个人神话具有了美国神话的特质。"美国也经历了失去父亲之后的探寻,他被从欧洲文化的古老土壤中分离出来,抛掷在美洲的荒原上,就像《旧约》中以实马利被父亲赶出家园一样"(叶舒宪 20)。父亲的悲剧性死亡暗示现代社会正处于秋去冬来、英雄已逝的时期,渺小无能的小人物被抛掷于危机的中心。悲剧既是人类惊慌无助现状的映射,又是集体反思、升华的契机。

综上所述,《路》的伦理错位及原型呈现共同形塑了小说的悲剧内核,凸显了其背后的情感张力与伦理意蕴,使读者阅读实现了从审美认同到道德认同的转向。无论是神话原型的多重复魅,还是文学伦理学对伦理秩序的强调和回归,都折射出作家在反思现代性、质疑科技理性的过程中,对失落的伦理价值的精神追寻。二者的结合证明艺术"不再是单纯的美学沉思,而成为一种伦理机构,参与了文明工作"(弗莱 459)。《路》中的伦理错位展现了后"9•11"时代伦理失序的社会之下自我与他者的迷思,而原型的介入是对小说伦理错位的纠偏,作为一种联结手段促使个体及客观事物之间"建立起认同一致的伦理规范"(王薇 19),并在主题呈现、伦理反思与观念重塑等方面,强化了小说的伦理书写效果。可以说,小说《路》唤醒并整合了深藏于迷失个体内心的普遍伦理意识,其颇具崇高性的悲剧结尾更是体现出在这个伦理和信仰双重缺失的时代急需更高层次的伦理呼唤。麦卡锡在《路》中通过伦理书写与神话原型的双重合奏,促使现代人在涅槃中重建平衡,从伦理层面探寻人类的末日救赎之路。

#### **Works Cited**

亚里士多德:《诗学》,陈中梅译。北京:商务印书馆,1996年。

[Aristotle. The Poetics, translated by Chen Zhongmei. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 1996.]

Arnold, Edwin T. "Naming, Knowing and Nothingness: McCarthy's Moral Parables." *Perspectives on Cormac McCarthy*, edited by E. T. Arnold et al. Jackson: UP of Mississippi, 1993: 45-70.

Bell, Vereen M. The Achievement of Cormac McCarthy. Baton Rougue: Louisiana State UP, 1988.

Fiedler, Leslie A. *Second Thoughts on Love and Death in American Novel* (2<sup>nd</sup> edition). New York: Delta Book, 1966.

诺斯洛普·弗莱: 《批评的剖析》,陈慧 袁宪军 吴伟仁译。天津: 百花文艺出版社,2002 年。

[Frye, Northrop. *Anatomy of Criticism*, translated by Chen Hui, Yuan Xianjun and Wu Weiren. Tianjin: Baihua Literature and Publishing House, 2002.]

荣格:《心理学与文学》,冯川 苏克译。北京:生活•读书•新知三联书店,1987年。

- [Jung. *Psychology and Literature*, translated by Feng Chuan and Su Ke. Beijing: SDX Joint Publishing Company, 1987.]
- Li, Lu Chen. "Steinbeck's Ethical Dimensions." Steinbeck Review, 1 (2009): 63-83.
- 李维屏、邹娟:"冲突·磨合·超越:论麦卡锡《路》中的父子伦理关系建构",《当代外国文学》 4(2013):5-10。
- [Li Weiping and Zou Juan. "Conflict, Tolerance and Transcendence: The Construction of the Ethical Relationship between Father and Son in McCarthy's *The Road.*" *Contemporary Foreign Literature* 4 (2013): 5-10.]
- 科马克·麦卡锡:《路》,杨博译。重庆:重庆出版社,2012年。
- [McCarthy, Cormac. *The Road*, translated by Yang Bo. Chongqing: Chongqing Publishing House, 2012.]
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评:论文学的基本功能与核心价值",《外国文学研究》4(2014):8-13。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: On Fundamental Function and Core Value of Literature." Foreign Literature Studies 4 (2014): 8-13.]
- ——: 《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- ——: "文学伦理学批评的价值选择与理论建构",《中国社会科学》10(2020):71-92。
- [—. "Value Choice and the Theoretical Construction of Ethnical Literary Criticism." *Social Science in China Press* 10 (2020): 71-92.]
- 聂珍钊等: "文学伦理学批评与文学跨学科前沿(笔谈)",《华中师范大学学报》(人文社会科学版)2(2022):79-105。
- [Nie Zhenzhao et al. "Discussion on Ethical Literary Criticism and Frontiers of Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature." *Journal of Central China Normal University (Humanities and Social Sciences)* 2 (2022): 79-105.]
- 聂珍钊、王松林:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin. A Study on the Theory of Ethnical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]
- 王薇: "后'9·11'伦理与《回声制造者》的隐喻叙事",《东方论坛——青岛大学学报》(社会科学版)4(2020):13-20。
- [Wang Wei. "Intersection': Metaphorical Narrative and Post-9/11 Ethics in *The Echo Maker*." Eastern Forum—Journal of Qingdao University (Social Science Edition) 4 (2020): 13-20.]
- 杨革新: "从伦理批评到文学伦理学批评: 美国伦理批评的困境与出路",《上海师范大学学报》 (哲学社会科学版)1(2019):50-57。
- [Yang Gexin. "From Ethical Criticism to Ethical Literary Criticism: The Dilemma and Way-Out of American Ethical Criticism." *Journal of Shanghai Normal University (Philosophy and Social Sciences)* 1 (2019): 50-57.]
- 叶舒宪: 《神话-原型批评》。西安: 陕西师范大学出版社,2011年。
- [Ye Shuxian. Myth-Archetypal Criticism. Xi'an: Shanxi Normal University General Publishing House, 2011.]

# 我是谁?——儿童图画书中的自我认知与社会化Who am I? Self-cognition and Socialization in Children's Picture Books

吕洪波(Lyu Hongbo)

内容摘要:儿童的社会化既要求儿童具有一定的自我认知能力,又能够帮助儿童加强自我认知。图画中的大量动物形象有利于儿童从形式上区分人和动物,而文本故事中的拟人化行为可以告知儿童如何做出正确的伦理选择,因此图文结合在一起产生更大的叙事效果,更具启发性。《我不知道我是谁》中的达利 B 积极主动地追问关于自我的基本问题,看似简单滑稽,实则隐喻人类探索自我的终极思考,同时召唤人类反思自我,回归本真。《永远远爱你》中的伦理困境呈现出多重身份的矛盾与协调,《活了一百万次的猫》则传达出确认伦理身份的重要性,以及自我认知对社会化的促进作用。图画书中呈现出关于自我认知的榜样和警示,可以为儿童读者扩展现实中无法完成的体验,并且启发儿童思考对自我身份的确认和选择,有效地帮助儿童从自我中心走向社会化。

**关键词:**自我认知;社会化;《我不知道我是谁》;《永远永远爱你》;《活了一百万次的猫》

作者简介: 吕洪波, 江南大学外国语学院讲师, 主要从事儿童文学和文学伦理学批评研究。本文为江苏省教育厅高校哲学社会科学研究一般项目 "20世纪美国儿童图画书的符号认知与伦理价值研究" 【项目批号: 2021SJA0874】以及江南大学基本科研计划青年基金项目 "20世纪美国儿童图画书的认知研究" 【项目批号: JUSRP121100】阶段性成果。

Title: Who am I? Self-cognition and Socialization in Children's Picture Books

**Abstract:** Children's socialization requires a certain level of self-cognition, and can in turn help children to strengthen their self-cognition. In picture books, the large number of animal figures in the illustrations facilitates children's formal distinction between humans and animals, and the anthropomorphic behavior in the text stories can inform children how to make the right ethical choices. The combination of illustrations and text produces a greater narrative effect, which is more inspiring. Daley B in *You're a Hero Daley B!* proactively asks fundamental questions about the self, which seems to be simple and comical, but in fact is a metaphor for the

ultimate thinking of human beings to explore the self, while calling them to reflect on themselves and return to their true nature. The ethical dilemma in *I Will Love You Forever* presents the contradiction and reconciliation of multiple identities, while *The Cat That Lived a Million Times* conveys the importance of confirming ethical identity and the contribution of self-cognition to socialization. Picture books present role models and warnings about self-cognition, which can expand child readers' unfinished experience in reality, inspire them to confirm and choose identity, as well as effectively help children move from self-centeredness to socialization.

**Keywords:** self-cognition; socialization; *You're a Hero Daley B!*; *I Will Love You Forever*; *The Cat That Lived a Million Times* 

**Author:** Lyu Hongbo is Lecturer at the School of Foreign Studies, Jiangnan University (Wuxi 214122, China). Her current research interests are Children's Literature and Ethical Literary Criticism (Email: lyuhongbo@qq.com).

自我认知是个体进行自我观察和自我评价的一种高级思维活动,具体表现为人能够区别自己与其他事物,发现自己的独特性并认可自己的各种身份。根据自我认知的发展规律,儿童在具备自我意识之后,还要在社会化的过程中通过与他者互动得到"我是谁"的答案,进而不断确认自我在复杂社会关系中的不同身份。社会化是个体在特定的环境中学习并适应特定规范的过程,也是个体进行伦理化的方式。皮亚杰的儿童发展心理学解释了儿童自我认知的思维前提,维果茨基的社会文化理论强调了社会化对人类思维的重要性,而文学伦理学批评则揭示了自我认知和社会化的伦理本质。综合以上三种理论,不难发现,由于儿童的最初自我意识具有自我中心性,所以只有当儿童扩大活动范围,参与到越来越多的社交活动中时才有机会进一步提升自我认知,进而获得伦理启蒙。优秀的儿童图画书作品能够从儿童的视角真实生动地描绘儿童自我认知的特征以及社会化的进程,从而有效地帮助儿童读者认知自我,也能使成人读者更好地了解儿童心理,在尊重儿童认知发展客观规律的前提下培养儿童的自我认知能力。

## 一、在社会化中确认自我身份

伦理是人与人之间的关系,是人们共同认可、遵守和维护的集体的和社会的道德准则与标准,因此伦理启蒙离不开个体的社会化。根据儿童发展心理学的研究,儿童在2岁前后具备自我识别能力,可以通过镜子或照片来再认自己,但是这种镜像再认只是认识到"现在自我",不能将其他时间的自己关联起来。到了4岁前后,儿童通过对自己经历的回忆,也称为自传体回忆,发展出"扩展自我",可以意识到跨时间的恒定的自我实体。儿童守恒性的获得

依赖于逻辑的推理对感知直观的纠正,标志着儿童思维发展的新水平。与此同时,儿童在逻辑分类方面的发展也在不断提高,分类的标准首先是事物之间形象的类似性,然后是相同的属性,直至真正掌握事物之间的关系。因此,儿童对自我的认识首先是从形式上对人和其他类别的动物进行区分,然后发现人的本质。这个自我认知过程恰好是人类文明发展历史的缩影,在文学伦理学批评提出的人类文明发展三阶段论中,自然选择阶段是第一个阶段,它是人类做出的一次生物性选择,完成自然选择使人类获得了人的形式,正如新生儿的诞生,具备了人在自然生理上的形式。当下人类正处于第二个阶段,伦理选择阶段,这是有关人的本质的选择。如果要从本质上把人同兽区别开来,首先必须从产生人的伦理意识开始,再逐步形成善恶观念,明确伦理身份和伦理责任,做出正确的自我选择。

对自我的识别和扩展,可以帮助儿童进行社会化,并对自己进行社会 类别划分,比如性别、年龄等。在这个分类过程中,儿童不断审视自我,会 对自己产生许多疑惑。图画书《我不知道我是谁》(You're a Hero Dalev B!、 1992)从儿童的视角展示了这样一些疑问,比如,我是谁?我要住在哪里? 我应该吃什么?我为什么长着大大的脚?这个故事借由一只小兔子的形象隐 喻儿童,封面(见图 A)上那个面朝读者站立的兔子,竖着两只长耳朵,瞪 着两只圆眼睛,一根手指放在嘴角,俨然一个心中充满疑惑的小孩在思考着 问题。整本书的幽默是由图文矛盾创造出来的,这是图画书独有的功能。当 文字文本在提问时,图画已经给出了答案,或者不妨说图画出卖了文字,因 为书上明明画的是一只兔子。不过,图画本身呈现的也是一种矛盾,它既完 整准确地呈现出一只兔子,又同时表现了这只兔子的满脸疑惑,它确实不知 道自己是什么动物,这代表着每个人成长的起点。这本书对留白的使用也是 非常有用意的,每当达利 B 提出问题时,那个页面就会使用大量的留白,突 出了它在思考时的专注,以及有限的脑文本。图画以视觉形式呈现出角色的 思维过程,符合儿童的具象思维方式。有趣的是,在给每个问题呈现答案选 项时,文图一致,却与事实不符,这就需要读者调用自己已有的脑文本做出 判断了。因此,儿童在阅读这本书时,同时能够体验一种游戏式的互动。读 者是参与故事的一部分,需要对达利 B 的问题做出回答,以此来推动情节的 发展。

如果不能正确认识自己和他人,以及自己与他人之间的关系,其实就是不懂伦理规则,那么就会遇到麻烦,甚至是生命危险。这个故事给出了一个警示,达利B不知道自己是兔子,也不知道杰西D是黄鼠狼,更不知道黄鼠狼要吃掉兔子。所以,在杰西D出现时,即使有其他兔子劝告达利B赶快从树上下来,它却没有像同伴那样逃回自己的洞里去,因为达利B根本不知道自己要住在兔子洞里。它竟然继续模仿小松鼠,坐在橡树的树枝上吃橡树果实。虽然接下来的文字文本没有交代,但是图画清楚地讲述了其他小动物都藏起

来的事实,小松鼠、小鸟、虫子、蝴蝶全都不见了。就好像在一场戏剧表演中,其他角色纷纷退场,只把舞台留给了达利B和杰西D。对比其他兔子和动物们在逃亡时的慌慌张张和浑身发抖,达利B显然是无比淡定从容,正所谓"无知者无畏",它不仅依然稳坐在树枝上,还主动跟杰西D招手打招呼。当杰西D开始往树上爬去接近达利B时,达利B却面带微笑看着读者,这和树下草地上那些兔子洞里露出的一个个惊恐的兔子面孔形成了鲜明的对比(见图B),情节的紧张感油然而生。杰西D越来越近了,达利B竟然开始以聊天的方式向杰西D提问,你是什么动物?你住在哪里?你吃什么?就在这一问一答的交流之中,作为天敌的杰西D教会了达利B关于自己的知识,帮助达利B解答了它自己是谁的问题。当达利B知道自己是兔子,对方是黄鼠狼,黄鼠狼要吃掉兔子时,它其实相当于获得了伦理启蒙,产生了伦理意识。于是,达利B在杰西D扑向自己的那一刻,终于做出了正确的自我选择,它"想都没想,转过身,大脚一踢,像闪电一样咻的跑开了。" 达利B顿悟了自己为什么会有大脚,明白了大脚是为了让它跑得快,它对自我的认知又加深了一层。

儿童对自我的认知需要在社会化中进行,需要参与到教与学的过程里。 虽然达利 B 在危险时刻发挥自己的本能逃过一劫,但这只是儿童文学为了避免过于残酷的结局,而选取的一种并不常见的偶然。在自然界里,要想生存下去,就必须遵守弱肉强食的丛林法则,在人类的伦理社会中,也一样存在"知己知彼,百战不殆"的规则。懂得规则的必要前提就是回答达利 B 关于自我认知的所有问题,儿童只有形成人的概念,才能产生伦理意识,然后具备伦理观念。不过,这个转危为安,反败为胜的结局也阐发了另一个道理,仅仅具备形式是不够的,关键是要有头脑,有脑文本,有思想,才能算是真正的人,才能做出正确的自我选择,才能有本领立足于社会之中。通过对自我疑惑的解答,小兔子达利 B 不仅可以引导启发儿童对自己的思考,对成人也有启示意义。成年之后的人们有时会迷失自我,忘掉了身份,这种本源的思考可以唤醒迷途中人,回归本真,重新走上正轨。因此,伦理启蒙不仅局限于儿童群体,任何缺乏伦理选择所需知识的人,都需要接受伦理启蒙。

在《我不知道我是谁》的最后一页,创作者又抛出了一个关于自我认知的更高层次问题,让达利 B 再次陷入了思考。当达利 B 成功逃脱杰西 D 的攻击之后,其他的兔子们都跑出来,兴奋地对它说"达利 B,你是英雄!"(20)很显然,达利 B 不知道英雄这个概念,以为英雄也是指某种动物,于是刚刚得知自己是兔子的达利 B 因为这个新的名称又陷入了思考(见图 C)。其实对于达利 B 来说,它已经有了两个身份,一个是兔子,一个是英雄,这两个身份可以并存,并不冲突。

<sup>1</sup> 本文有关《我不知道我是谁》的引文均来自乔恩·布莱克著,阿克塞尔·舍夫勒绘:《我不知道我是谁》,邢培健译(北京:新星出版社,2013年,第18页)。以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

# 二、在社会化中扩展自我认知

自我认知与社会化都是动态发展的过程,儿童处于自我认知和社会化的初始阶段。随着进一步的社会化,儿童会进入更为复杂的伦理关系中,继而产生多重伦理身份。伦理身份是文学伦理学批评中的一个重要概念,也是人们做出伦理选择的基础。聂珍钊将伦理身份分为两种,一种是与生俱来的,一种是后天获取的。一定程度上,与生俱来的身份是客观的自然结果,后天获取的身份则是在社会化中形成的主观伦理选择的结果。对于人来讲,伦理身份会更加复杂,根据人所处的不同伦理环境以及多重伦理关系,它有多种分类。伦理身份赋予个人权利与责任,它是道德行为和道德规范的前提,是个人做出伦理选择的根源,也是人类社会化的基础。宫西达也(Tatsuya Miyanishi)的《永远永远爱你》(『ずっとずっとあいしてる』,I Will Love You Forever, 2006)围绕身份问题展开故事,主要讲述揭露真实伦理身份之后面临的伦理困境,以及最终做出怎样的伦理选择。

如果不进行伦理启蒙,就有可能认不清自己的伦理身份,特别是生活在非同类的环境中。良太是一只霸王龙,因为从小被一只慈母龙妈妈养大,和小慈母龙光太亲如手足,于是以为自己也是慈母龙。良太没有正确认识自己与生俱来的伦理身份,一是由于年纪还小,没有学习那么多知识;二是因为生活环境单一,没有发展更多的社交关系。光太在社会化交往中从甲龙叔叔那里得知了关于霸王龙的知识,了解到霸王龙的外形特征和凶恶本性,并且习得了一条伦理规则,即大家都讨厌霸王龙。光太回家后竟然发现良太正好符合霸王龙的体貌特征,于是它说良太有点像霸王龙,但是被慈母龙妈妈及时制止了。慈母龙妈妈出于保护良太的心理,故意隐瞒实情,不想让孩子们知道真相。因为霸王龙一直被大家视为凶狠的敌人,大家都对它敬而远之。如果良太的真实身份被揭露,那么它将不能继续生活在这里。从伦理上讲,良太的身份是一个慈母龙家庭的成员,这也是它的自我认知。

显然,伦理环境会对儿童的自我认知起到重要的作用,在特定伦理环境下,儿童接受的伦理规约具有一定的局限性。但是,成长就意味着走入更为广阔的伦理环境,并且突破固有的伦理观念。社会化是儿童成长的必经之路,也是儿童获取伦理身份并做出伦理选择的必要条件。终于有一天,良太在去摘红果子的路上遇到了霸王龙,从外形特征上良太猜测这是一只霸王龙,它知道霸王龙会吃掉慈母龙,所以良太感到很害怕。可是当霸王龙说它和良太一样时,良太竟误以为这也是一只慈母龙,便觉得轻松起来。当它们聊起好吃的东西,良太满脑子里都是红果子,而霸王龙满脑子里都是慈母龙。当霸王龙说出要带良太去吃慈母龙时,良太才意识到这真的是一只霸王龙,而且被告知自己也是一只霸王龙。显然,这与良太之前对自己的身份认知产生了冲突,良太不愿意接受自己是霸王龙的事实,但是它的确有锋利的

爪子、尖尖的牙齿和疙疙瘩瘩的皮肤,和面前这只霸王龙一模一样。良太无法否认的事实与它已有的自我认知产生了强烈的矛盾。它哭着跑回家去找慈母龙妈妈问清楚,慈母龙妈妈抛开良太的自然身份,选择了良太的伦理身份(见图D),告诉它"你是我的宝贝"」,良太很乐意知道自己不会失去在慈母龙家的身份。可是,当它看到一脸凶相的霸王龙朝慈母龙走来时,它做出了与这个伦理身份相符的选择,跑去咬住霸王龙,保护慈母龙的家庭成员。然而当它看到霸王龙流下眼泪却一点都不反抗时,良太意识到自己也是霸王龙的孩子,它可以同时拥有不同的身份,于是它最后做出的选择是离开慈母龙,但是依然默默地保护它们并为它们摘红果子,兼顾自然身份与伦理身份的责任,并在二者中取得了爱的平衡。

其实,良太的第一次社会化是被动和偶然的,这促成了它和慈母龙妈妈之间伦理关系的形成。心地善良的慈母龙妈妈在暴风雨过后的树林里发现了一个小小的蛋,她担心霸王龙发现后会吃掉它,所以把它带回家了。这是慈母龙妈妈做出的一个伦理选择,她从道德出发,对弱小者施予同情与帮助,但是她的道德观念具有一定的局限性,受到她本身是慈母龙身份的约束,她自然地把霸王龙置于敌对的一方,同时想当然地把不明身份的蛋宝宝和霸王龙对立起来,完全没有考虑到蛋宝宝也会是霸王龙的可能性。慈母龙妈妈对这个捡回来的蛋视如己出,和自己生下的蛋放在一起抚育。在慈母龙妈妈的精心照料下,两个宝宝破壳而出。这时,慈母龙妈妈才发现捡回来的蛋竟然是可怕的霸王龙的宝宝。于是慈母龙妈妈面临另一个伦理选择,把霸王龙宝宝留下来还是送回去?

与生俱来的身份是无法选择和不能改变的,身份带来的本性也无法消除。因此,一开始慈母龙妈妈选择了送回去,她考虑到一旦宝宝长大了,就会发现自己是霸王龙。自然法则中霸王龙会吃掉慈母龙的敌对关系是固有的,那么引狼入室、与敌为伴就是将自己和自己的亲生宝宝置于危险之中。于是,到了晚上,趁霸王龙宝宝睡着以后,慈母龙妈妈将熟睡的宝宝送回到遇见它的那片树林里。这是一场艰难的分离,慈母龙妈妈内心非常痛苦,她的道德情感和道德观念将她置于伦理两难之中。丢掉一个刚出生的宝宝是残忍的,得不到照料的宝宝有可能饿死,或者出现其他不好的意外。不丢下它呢,就会给自己将来埋下隐患。

内心挣扎的慈母龙妈妈在听到霸王龙宝宝的哭声时,善良的本性和母爱的力量使她做出了选择,她温柔地抱着宝宝回家了。在接下来的几年中,慈母龙妈妈坚守着自己的诺言,不仅没有丢掉霸王龙宝宝,还十分疼爱它。慈母龙妈妈的言传身教能够体现在为两个宝宝取的名字里,慈母龙宝宝笑眯眯的很开朗,取名光太(Light)。霸王龙宝宝强壮有力,希望它心地善良,取名良太(Heart)。在这个充满善良和关爱的家庭里,亲情超越了一切,甚至

<sup>1</sup> 参见宫西达也:《永远永远爱你》,蒲蒲兰译,南昌:二十一世纪出版社,2008年,第33页。

高于血亲关系。尽管天生的伦理身份不同,但是它们之间相处得非常好,如亲母子、亲兄弟一样。在良好的家庭伦理环境下成长起来的光太和良太也具备了较高的道德水平,光太会因为说出良太像霸王龙的玩笑而主动道歉,良太愿意付出努力为妈妈和弟弟摘取更多的红果子,让它们高兴。后来,即使良太离开了,慈母龙妈妈和光太还在每天四处寻找它。而良太即使离开了,还在慈母龙妈妈捡到它的那片树林里为它们摘红果子,尽到自己的伦理责任和担当。当慈母龙妈妈再次来到这里时,发现红果子已经堆成了一座小山。它们都做到了,无论你在哪里,都会永远永远爱你。

# 三、自我认知与社会化的共同提升

儿童的自我认知与社会化相辅相成,社会化的目的既包括加强对自我的认知,也包括推进社会的文明。儿童经历过社会化之后,有了正确的自我认知,方可明确伦理身份所背负的伦理责任,然后进行伦理选择。《活了100万次的猫》(『100万回生きたねこ』,The Cat That Lived a Million Times,1977)是一本畅销的图画书,无论儿童还是成人都喜欢阅读它。很多人说这是一本关于生命与爱的寓言,其实,这个故事探讨了不同伦理身份导致不同伦理选择的本质。无论生与死,还是爱与不爱,都是在对自我身份确认以后做出的自我选择。

一只漂亮的虎斑猫有过 100 万个身份,它曾经是国王的猫、水手的猫、魔术师的猫、小偷的猫、老太太的猫、小女孩的猫,它得到过那 100 万个人的宠爱,但是它讨厌他们。因为那时的虎斑猫没有找到自我,它只是别人的宠物、道具、工具、玩具、情感和精神的寄托。它要跟着国王去打仗,跟着水手走遍大海和码头,配合魔术师表演,帮助小偷引开看家狗,陪伴孤独的老太太,任由小女孩把它当作玩具。在这 100 万次的生死轮回中,虎斑猫自己没能够主动确认过这些被给予的身份,它一直都是被动地活在别人的世界里,从未主动做出过什么选择。没有做出自我选择正是因为它没有确认自己的身份。尽管虎斑猫讨厌那些主人,可是它从未选择离开,而是被动地接受一切安排,直至结束生命。它被战场上的箭射死,掉到水里淹死,被魔术师失手杀死,被狗咬死,随时间老死,被小女孩后背的带子勒死。当它死去,主人们都很伤心,有 100 万个人在这只猫死的时候哭了,但是虎斑猫一次也没有哭过。它就像人没有伦理意识一样,不知道自己的伦理身份,所以没有道德情感,即使别人给它爱,它也感受不到,更没有回应。

如果对自己的身份没有确认,生命就没有意义,虎斑猫在100万次的生死 轮回中毫无感觉,它已经不在乎死与不死了。尽管虎斑猫活过100万次,但是 它从来没有活出过自我。不过,后来,在虎斑猫的最后一次生命里,一切都 变得不一样了。它不再是别人的猫了,头一次变成了自己的猫,成了一只野 猫。这一次,虎斑猫确认了自己的身份,知道自己是一只漂亮的野猫,而且 它非常喜欢自己,接下来的一切都是它自己主动做出的选择。它拒绝那些向它示爱的母猫,无论它们送来大鱼,献上新鲜的老鼠,送来稀罕的草药,还是为它舔那漂亮的虎斑纹,它都不为所动,因为它太喜欢自己了,它不想让这些母猫成为它的新娘。但是,虎斑猫却被一只美丽的白猫吸引,它主动去搭讪,在白猫面前展示自己,白猫的娇羞和对它的冷淡态度反倒让虎斑猫更加喜欢,于是在征得白猫的同意后,虎斑猫在白猫身边一直待下来。然后它们组建家庭,养育了好多小猫。虎斑猫陪伴白猫一起慢慢老去,它开始在乎生死,它想和白猫永远地一起活下去。画面(见图E)中出现了一座房子,虎斑猫和白猫依偎着躺在院墙外的草地上。这幅图景传达了家的概念,还有虎斑猫对生命和爱的渴望与留恋。但是白猫终究还是死了,虎斑猫伤心恸哭(见图F),这是它头一回哭,哭了有100万次,哭得停不下来,直到死去,然后再也没有活过来。

《活了100万次的猫》这则寓言借由虎斑猫隐喻了人对自己身份的确认会 经历不同的阶段,因为人的身份是多重的,可以改变的。一开始是对自己区别 于其他动物的身份认知,然后是在与他人形成伦理关系之后,对自己在某种关 系中的身份进行确认,比如作为丈夫和父亲的身份。无论哪种身份,都会决定 人的伦理选择。虎斑猫确认过三个身份,对这三个身份的认知让他做出了很多 正确的自我选择,活出了自我,懂得了生命的意义。第一个身份是野猫,当虎 斑猫意识到自己是一直漂亮的野猫时,它表现出对自己的喜欢,它爱自己胜过 爱别人,所以它选择自己喜欢的白猫做伴侣。第二个身份是伴侣,虎斑猫成为 白猫的伴侣之后,它喜欢白猫胜过喜欢自己,它选择不离不弃,想要和白猫永 远一起活下去。白猫慢慢变老,虎斑猫对白猫更加温柔。当白猫躺在虎斑猫怀 里静静地死去,从没有哭过的虎斑猫第一次哭了,它抱着白猫伤心地哭,直到 最后一动不动地躺在了白猫身边,再也没有活过来。第三个身份是父亲,虎斑 猫和白猫生了好多可爱的小猫,它喜欢小猫们胜过喜欢自己,它选择同白猫一 起精心照顾小猫们,把它们都抚养成了漂亮的野猫。虎斑猫对这三重身份的确 认和它做出的这些自我选择,无疑可以成为人们的榜样,带给读者教诲和启 迪。人首先要认清自己的伦理身份,知道身份承担的责任,然后才能做出正确 的伦理选择、维系良好的伦理关系和伦理秩序,这样的生命才有意义,人生才 有价值。

从现实意义来看,阅读儿童图画书可以成为对儿童进行伦理启蒙的主要方法,这是因为伦理选择通过教诲实现。教诲就是在教与学的过程中传递经验,从内容上说,文学是经验,从功能上看,文学是教诲的工具,从文学脑文本的生成机制上看,文学又是方法。因此,要完成伦理选择,人类需要文学。婴儿诞生之初,正如人类刚刚完成进化,虽然具备了人的头脑和人的形式,但是在伦理上还处于混沌之中。婴儿凭借身体机能感知世界,想要走出伦理混沌,认知这个充满秩序的世界,他们需要"智慧果",即获得伦理启蒙和

理性成熟。儿童在理性成熟过程中可以借助文学帮助自己认识到自身与其他 动物的不同,形成关于人的概念,以建立伦理观念,获得伦理启蒙。儿童文 学中的图画书符合儿童的认知特点,常常借助动物形象讲述故事,一来从视 觉上强化人与其他动物在形式上的区别,二来从故事情节中传达人与其他动 物之间的联系。图画书中呈现出关于自我认知的榜样和警示,可以为儿童读 者扩展现实中无法完成的体验,并且启发儿童思考对自我身份的确认和选择, 有效地帮助儿童从自我中心走向社会化。

#### **Works Cited**

宫西达也: 《永远永远爱你》,蒲蒲兰译。南昌: 二十一世纪出版社,2008年。

[Miyanishi, Tatsuya. I Will Love You Forever, translated by Poplar. Nanchang: 21st Century Publishing Group, 2008.]

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literature Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.

乔恩·布莱克著,阿克塞尔·舍夫勒绘:《我不知道我是谁》,邢培健译。北京:新星出版社, 2013年。

[Blake, Jon. You're a Hero, Daley B!, illustrated by Axel Scheffler, translated by Xing Peijian. Beijing: New Star Press, 2013.]

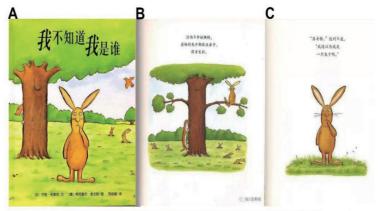
谢弗等:《发展心理学:儿童与青少年》(第9版),邹泓等译。北京:中国轻工业出版社,2016年。

[Shaffer, David R et al. Developmental Psychology: Childhood and Adolescence, 9th Edition, translated by Zou Hong. Beijing: China Light Industry Press, 2014.]

佐野洋子:《活了100万次的猫》, 唐亚明译。南宁:接力出版社, 2004年。

[Sano, Yoko. The Cat That Lived a Million Times, translated by Tang Yaming. Nanning: Jieli Publishing House, 2004.]

## 附图:









# 越战后伦理环境与越南革新开放以来长篇小说创作 The Ethical Environment after the Vietnam War and Novel Creation Since Renovation

阮英民(Nguyen Anh Dan)

内容摘要: 1975年4月30日,越南结束长期战争,迎来了和平与国家统一的新时期,但同时也遗留了许多战后问题,诸如一系列的社会危机和经济危机。因此,为解决这些战后问题,1986年12月15日至18日越共六大在河内召开,正式实施革新开放政策。新的历史背景和伦理环境为越南作家队伍和小说创作营造了良好的动力,越南新文学,包括长篇小说应运而生。基于越共号召支持的民主化和文学创新运动,越南作家凭借才华,创造了一系列小说,其成就主要体现在小说思维的显著革新、小说题材的扩展、小说风格的多样化以及小说创作技巧的专业化。然而,补贴制度、市场经济、国际文化交流、全球化等一系列因素引发了道德价值危机,导致出现毫无教诲功能的"空载"(không tài)小说。由此,本文以文学伦理学批评方法剖析越南战争之后的长篇小说创作与革新开放过程中的伦理环境之间的关系。

关键词: 伦理环境; 越南战争; 革新开放; 长篇小说; 伦理危机 作者简介: 阮英民, 文学博士, 越南顺化师范大学文学院讲师, 主要研究方向为文学伦理学批评、越南文学、比较文学与世界文学。本文受越南顺化大学资助【项目批号: DHH2023-03-187】。

**Title:** The Ethical Environment after the Vietnam War and Novel Creation Since Renovation

Abstract: On April 30, 1975, Vietnam ended its long war and ushered in a new period of peace and national reunification, but it also left behind many post-war problems, such as a series of social crises and economic crises. Therefore, in order to solve these post-war problems, the Sixth National Congress of the Communist Party of Vietnam was held in Hanoi from December 15 to 18, 1986, to officially implement the reform and opening-up policy (Đổi mới). The new historical background and ethical environment provided vital motivations for writers and novel writing activities. The new Vietnamese literature, including the novel, was born in such a historical context. Based on the democratisation and literary innovation movements called and supported by the CPV, the local writers have created a fruitful harvest of novels with their talents. Its achievements are primarily

reflected in four aspects: the apparent renovation of novel thinking, the expansion of novel themes, the diversification of novel styles, and the specialisation of novel writing skills. However, a series of adverse factors such as the subsidy period (thời kì bao cấp), the market economy, international cultural exchange and globalisation have led to a crisis of moral values and the emergence of "không tải" novels that have no educational function. Thus, this paper adopts Ethical Literary Criticism to analyse the relationship between the ethical environment and the novel creation in the process of Renovation after the Vietnam War.

**Keywords:** ethical environment; Vietnam War; Renovation; novels; ethical crisis **Author: Nguyen Anh Dan** is Ph.D. at the Faculty of Linguistics and Literature, University of Education, Hue University (Hue 530000, Vietnam). His academic research focused on Ethical Literary Criticism, Vietnamese literature, comparative and world literature (Email: nguyenanhdan@hueuni.edu.vn).

1975年4月30日,越南长期战争结束,迎来了和平与国家统一的新时期,但同时也遗留了许多战后问题,其中最为严重的是战后十年(1975-1985)国内出现的一系列社会经济危机。因此,为解决这些战后问题,1986年12月15日至18日越共六大在河内召开,正式实施革新开放政策¹。一般而言,新的历史时期意味着新的伦理环境,对社会的各个方面都会带来影响,文学活动也不例外。实际上,越南文学自1986年以来已经发生了明显的转变,其主要特征是创新和革新。这种文学现象明显地受到国际一体化(外部性的)、工业化和现代化(内部性的)过程的影响²。总的来说,自越南革新开放以来,长篇小说的创作与整个文学的革新情况是密切相关的。需要指明的是,长篇小说的实践创作及成果并不是与前一阶段的决裂,而是在这种特殊伦理环境中的延续和升华。因为越南战后及革新开放的伦理环境在为长篇小说的创新提供要求和动力的同时,其不良因素也冲击着作家的伦理意识,迫使他们做出相应的伦理选择。现实表明,伦理立场正确的小说家将会创作出有价值和伦理教诲的作品,反之,则有可能写出"娱乐"、"便宜"、"色情"等一些没有教诲价值的"空载"(không tǎi)小说。

## 一、文学"解开"与作家觉醒

越南人民经过艰苦卓绝的斗争和巨大的牺牲战胜了美军和其盟军,并在

<sup>1</sup> 越南的"革新开放"(越南语: Đổi mới)是在中国提出"改革开放"政策七年之后开展的。 尽管模仿了中国改革开放的模型,但越南对其政策的命名与中国不一致。

<sup>2</sup> See Phan, Thuong T. "Để có cái nhìn toàn diện về văn học thời kì Đổi mới." *Văn học Việt Nam ba mươi năm đổi mới (1986-2016): Sáng tạo và tiếp nhận*, edited by Nguyễn Thành. Hồ Thế Hà. Hà Nội: Nhà xuất bản Văn học, 2017. 11-15.

1975年4月30日实现了国家统一。尽管获得了胜利,但越南人民没能真正享受安宁,因为战后出现了严重的社会经济困难。比如社会主义国家阵营削减了对越南的援助,美方吞噬了尼克松总统1973年承诺的30亿美元重建资金,以及1978年的自然灾害夺去了大约30亿吨粮食。此外,1978年12月,越南与柬埔寨西南边界发生了战争。一年之后,越南与中国之间的西北边界武装冲突爆发了。以上种种例子表面战后的越南面临着一系列社会经济危机。为了挽救局面,越南共产党从1975年至1986年实施了计划经济,以促进社会发展。可悲的是计划经济并不理想,它反而给当地人民带来了严重的危机。因此,面对这一严峻现实,1986年底召开的越共六大决定全面实施革新开放政策。

在文学方面,党中央发布了"解开"(cổi trối)政策,允许作者在艺术创作上更具独立性和创造性。实际上,越南革新开放文学的开端事件是越共已故总书记阮文灵(Nguyễn Văn Linh)于1987年10月6日至7日与全国一百多名作家和艺术家的交谈。在这次谈话中,阮文灵听取了作家们的想法:第一,多年来,党低估了文化文艺的作用以及作家的地位;第二,党在文艺领域上的领导较为独断,缺乏民主;第三,文艺的组织和管理机制以及对作家的资金政策仍然不足<sup>2</sup>。他认为以上三点是造成越南国家统一后的十年里,知识分子、作家和艺术家队伍贡献不大,以及作品"匮乏"局面的主要原因。所以,"解开"是应对这种"匮乏"的必要条件。阮文灵讲道:"我认为这里说的'解开',那么党首先必须在组织、政策、规则、制度等领域中解开"(3)。此次谈话最大的收获之一就是营造了文艺创作的民主气氛,解开了所谓"禁锢",因此作家们能够不拘一格地表达自己的内心和灵魂。

1987年12月5日,《文艺周报》(Báo Văn nghệ)发表了阮明洲(Nguyễn Minh Châu)的《对一个插图文艺阶段读哀悼》,此文一经发表便轰动一时。阮明洲所指的"插图文艺"(văn nghệ minh họa)就是1986年之前的文艺时期,体现了革命文学阶段(1945-1975)的文学特征。这一阶段,作家受到许多"金箍"的束缚,所以在创作中作家们不得不同时握住两支笔:一支为普通读者写作,另一支为文艺"检阅者"写作(2)。阮明洲不否认革命文学的成就,但他也承认自由创作只存在于"插图创作"、"插图文学"和"插图作家界",这导致的必然结果是作家失去创造力和作品缺乏新颖和独特的思想。他认为,如果文艺和文艺领导不以插图为指导,而是鼓励创造力、接受文艺的多样性、相信作家的良知,那么越南文艺将会取得更好的成就(15)。

<sup>1</sup> See M. Rato. *Peasants and the Countryside in Post-1975 Vietnamese Literature*. 2003. University of London, PhD dissertation: 58.

<sup>2</sup> See Nguyen, Linh V. "The General Secretary Nguyen Van Linh Talks with Writers and Artists." *Van Nghe Newspaper* 17 Oct 1987: 3.

一方面, 阮文灵的谈话体现了为文学革新营造民主氛围的共识: 另一方面, 阮明州的文章体现了作家破旧迎新的深刻自觉。这两件大事成为一个重要的 召唤,促使越南作家走向革新和民主。他们不仅被党"解开",而且自己主 动"解开",由此掀起了一场持续三年(1987-1990)的文学革新运动,推动 越南当代文学到达高峰。革新开放之光见证了黎榴(Lê Lựu)的《遥远的时 代》 (Thời xa vắng, 1987) 、范氏怀 (Pham Thi Hoài) 的《天使》 (Thiên sứ, 1988)、阮智勋(Nguyễn Trí Huân)的《飞燕》(Chim én bay, 1988)、阮凯 (Nguyễn Khải) 的《一个微小的人间》 (Một cõi nhân gian bé tí, 1989)、保 宁(Bảo Ninh)的《战争哀歌》(Nỗi buồn chiến tranh, 1990)、杨向(Dương Hướng) 的《无夫码头》 (Bến không chồng, 1990) 、阮克长 (Nguyễn Khắc Trường)的《人多鬼杂之地》(*Mảnh đất lắm người nhiều ma*, 1990)等一系列 长篇小说的响亮登场。在20世纪80年代末90年代初,越南小说革新到达高 潮。1991年越南作家协会为保宁、杨向和阮克长的颁奖标志着以"非英雄"、 "悲剧性"和"个体人"主题的小说类型占据主导地位,同时也表明当代读 者逐渐忽略了曾经以"英雄审美"为特征的革命文学。越南的战后小说家告 别英雄主义,将文学带回了日常生活,着眼于普通人以及人类生活的复杂性。 准确地说,在新的伦理环境形势下,战争终止、众多新生的复杂面貌出现时, 贴近日常生活的小说创作才是作家的正确伦理选择。

## 二、越南革新开放以来长篇小说的新特征

越南革新开放以来,新的伦理环境的转变与发展、越共的"解开"及民主化运动推动了作家的文艺创作。由此,长篇小说取得了丰富多彩的成就,其成就大致可归纳为如下几个方面。

首先,小说思维的明显革新。在新的伦理环境下,越南当代作家争取并充分利用了越共支持的民主化运动,发挥平等精神、讲究实际需求、展开多维描写。借此,小说在内容和艺术表现形式上发生了明显的变化,其显著特点是从"单音调小说"转为"复音调小说"。小说家敢于涉足曾经的文学"禁地",如土地改革、合作社、农村改造、履历文化、党的建设等领域。此外,小说增加了对话性和反思性,小说思维的创新促进了对人物的更新。小说中的人物变得更加为"人",即体现了人性因子和兽性因子的不同维度,这有助于将人类形象塑造成为一种如聂珍钊教授所说的"完整的人格":"人作为个体的存在,等同于一个完整的斯芬克斯因子,因此人身上也就同时存在人性因子和兽性因子。这两种因子结合在一起,才能构成完整的人格"(《伦理选择与斯芬克斯因子》10)。在文学伦理学批评看来,1986年后越南长篇小说中的人物形象变得更加真实、更加合理,所以也更加"人性化"。

其次,小说题材的扩展。除了传统题材或延续前一文学时期"惯性"的题材之外,越南革新开放以来的长篇小说题材更与战后伦理环境的生活气

息紧密相关。小说题材不再局限于战争、士兵和英雄主义,而是扩大范围,涵盖了战争与士兵、农村与农民、历史与名人、城市与市民、文化与政治、金钱与道德、身体与性交等丰富多样的题材。例如,一些作家写到了同性恋题材,如裴英进(Bùi Anh Tấn)的《一个没有女人的世界》(Một thế giới không có đàn bà, 2000)和《女同性恋一双手没有男人》(Les-Vòng tay không đàn ông, 2005)、琼奘(Quỳnh Trang)的《1981》(2007)、武庭江(Vũ Đình Giang)的《平行》(Song song, 2007)、阮诗生(Nguyễn Tho Sinh)的《对不起,我已爱上他了》(Xin lỗi em, anh đã yêu anh ấy, 2007)和《男女同性恋的爱情故事》(Chuyện tình của Lesbian và Gay, 2007)、黄元(Hoàng Nguyên)和端奘(Đoan Trang)代写的阮文勇(Nguyễn Văn Dũng)的自传《男同性恋》(Bóng, 2008)、水•安娜(Thủy Anna)的《性别迷失》(Lạc giới, 2008)。这些小说是越南1986年之前的文学中从未出现的题材。这种题材结构的改变源于越战后伦理环境中文学观念的变化。战前文学主要关注"历史",而战后文学主要关注"人"(Nguyễn Thị Bình 84),这里所讲的"人"是包含斯芬克斯因子的世俗人。

其三,小说风格多样化。越南革新开放以来的长篇小说的风格极为丰富,包括写实、平实、浪漫、幽默、优美、幻想等五花八门的叙事写法。可以说,作家的写作风格在一定程度上也提升了小说题材的价值。保宁以其冷酷悲伤的战争描写而闻名,梨榴凭借有关农村和农民现实的小说青史留名,阮越何(Nguyễn Việt Hà)以无法模仿的城市幽默风格展现了他的小说才华,阮春庆(Nguyễn Xuân Khánh)独占文化历史小说之巅,阮平芳(Nguyễn Bình Phương)的小说体现了冷酷与可怕、理智与疯狂之间的交叉,陶胜(Đào Thắng)的小说能够将读者带入神话般的民间精神信仰境界,邓伸(Đặng Thân)的小说则包含了各种语言、技术、网络、文化等独特风格。

最后,小说创作的技巧专业化。战后,尤其是革新开放后,越南作家逐渐吸收世界文学的精华,在小说中运用了意识流独白、魔幻现实、非理性、象征、后现代等从西方传来的写作技巧。关键的是,这些创作技巧正好适用于表达战争中的人类命运、历史的黑点、生态环境、全球化背景下的移民命运等小说主题。此外,小说家的叙事方式也有许多根本性的创新。比如,越南作家最流行的创作技巧之一便是后现代主义技巧,他们倾向于使用第一人称叙事方式、交替的叙事聚焦、语言的通俗化〔……〕这种写法使越南小说家既能在国内文坛中创造出多风格的小说面貌,又能贴近世界文坛的小说手法。

## 三、越南"历战农城"四大题材小说的窥见

如上所述,越南革新开放以来长篇小说的题材体系得到了扩展,总的来说,这个体系的四大类型主要包括"历战农城",即历史小说、战争小说、农村小说和城市小说。

在历史小说方面,越南小说家以一种妥当的方式对历史文献进行处理, 即将史料变成分析和解释历史的艺术资源。作品中的往事成为一种再认识 和反思的历史,如阮梦觉(Nguyễn Mông Giác)的《汛期昆江》(Sông Côn *mùa lũ*, 1998)、阮春庆的《胡季犛》(*Hồ Quý Ly*, 2000)和《林宫圣母》 (Mẫu Thượng Ngàn, 2006) 以及武氏好 (Võ Thị Hảo) 的《烧台》 (Giàn thiêu, 2003) 、阮光伸(Nguyễn Quang Thân)的《盟会》(Hôi thề, 2009)。 在这些作品中,作家主要解释历史人物在越南封建朝代不同的历史和习俗文 化环境中所做出的各种各样的伦理选择。凭借对于历史的描写和反思,历史 小说再现了王权和宫斗,彰显了某些人物的邪恶,同时作家也对那些誓死维 护伦理准则的忠臣和善良人物表现出高度赞赏。陈垂梅(Trần Thùy Mai)的 《慈裕太后》(Từ Dụ thái hậu, 2019)便是历史小说的经典作品。此外, 黄国 海(Hoàng Quốc Hải)的《陈朝风暴》(*Bão táp triều Trần*, 1989-2010)也被 认为是越南当代文学中优秀的历史小说之一。通过巧妙处理小说中的历史事 实与艺术虚构二者的关系,人物的伦理选择成为作家对越南历史进行再解读 和反思的有力工具。更为特别的是,小说中历史人物的伦理选择还呈现出越 南民族主义和英雄主义色彩。越南文化与其它文化实体之间的伦理冲突在越 南革新开放以来的历史小说中也得到了充分展现,阮春庆的《林宫圣母》便 是一个杰出的例证。

就小说人物形象而言,正如上文所述,越南 1986 年后的作家更倾向于书写人物的两面性和复杂性,尤其是人性因子和兽性因子的混杂。其中最重要的是,不同于革命文学时期的文学,小说家不再以简单的二元模式区分敌我、好坏、善恶等艺术形象。即使不同的党派、政治、文化,这种"人"的身份也体现了小说人物的共同伦理身份。在此基础上,战后越南小说家在战争小说中对于士兵形象的描绘更加客观公正,体现了我们和敌人之间伦理关系的转换。因此,读者第一次能够以多样的视角看到两方的士兵形象,如保宁的《战争哀歌》、屈光瑞(Khuất Quang Thụy)的《火墙》(Những bức tường lửa, 2004)和《对战》(Đối chiến, 2015)、阮廷秀(Nguyễn Đình Tú)的《荒心》(Hoang tâm, 2013)、礌月明(Sương Nguyệt Minh)的《荒地》(Miền hoang, 2014)、阮光立(Nguyễn Quang Lập)的《沙情》(Tình cát, 2015)、朱来(Chu Lai)的《红雨》(Mua đỏ, 2016)等战争小说。

另外,越南当代作家争取并利用了越共支持的民主化运动,于是他们主动冲进文学"禁地"、探讨各类敏感主题,这主要体现在农村小说中,包括黎榴的《遥远的时代》、杨向的《无夫码头》、阮克长的《人多鬼杂之地》、谢维英(Tā Duy Anh)的《老苦》(*Lão Khổ*, 1992)、苏怀(Tô Hoài)的《其他三个人》(*Ba người khác*, 1993)、郑清风(Trịnh Thanh Phong)的《村鬼》(*Ma làng*, 2002)、阮平芳的《最初》(*Thoạt kì thủy*, 2004)、阮潘郝(Nguyễn Phan Hách)的《狂风》(*Cuồng phong*, 2008)、阮克批(Nguyễn Khắc Phê)

的《哪知地狱还是天堂》 (Biết đâu đia ngưc thiên đàng, 2010) 等。

就城市小说而言, 小说家努力解剖蕴含当代气氛的主题和内容, 尤其是 着重描写市场经济的弊端、金钱力量以及道德沦落。这种市民社会的伦理危 机集中体现在胡英泰(Hồ Anh Thái)的《按铃世界末日的人世》(Cõi người rung chuông tận thế, 2002) 和《十零一夜》 (Mười lẻ một đêm, 2006) 、阮北 山(Nguyễn Bắc Sơn)的《活法与父子》(Luât đời và cha con, 2005),伊班 (Y Ban) 的《春慈暮》 (Xuân Từ Chiều, 2008) 等长篇小说。其中,作家深 入探讨都市生活中的道德价值危机、被破坏的家庭伦理、以及市民男女迷失 的生活理想及其伦理身份。阮越何的《主的机会》(Co hội của Chúa, 1999) 和《市民小说》(Thi dân tiểu thuyết, 2019)、谢惟英的《寻找人物》(Đi tìm nhân vật, 2002)、夜银(Da Ngân)的《渺小的家庭》(Gia đình bé mọn, 2005)、阮名蓝(Nguyễn Danh Lam)的《迷失径流之间》(Giữa dòng chảy lac, 2010) 、杜奋(Đỗ Phấn)的《近乎生活》(Gần như là sống, 2013)、阿 顺的《西贡的电梯》(Thang máy Sài Gòn, 2013)等长篇小说便深刻呈现了这 些主题。

在小说艺术方面,越南革新开放以来的小说家实现了小说艺术创新的重 要伦理选择,该选择完全符合战后越南新文学的要求。在新的伦理环境中, 与革命文学阶段不同,越南当代作家对小说题材的艺术伦理观、作家和文学 的作用、文学与现实、文学与政治、作家与读者等之间的关系进行改革。艺 术伦理观的变化要求小说家必须更新艺术手法,并改变小说结构、革新叙述 方法、小说语言等,从而才能传达所希冀的艺术讯息和教育价值。并且,通 过调整社会主义现实主义方法,接受并运用诗学、解构主义、魔幻现实主 义、后现代主义、女性主义、生态批评等西方文学理论和思潮,越南当代作 家逐渐与世界文学的发展接轨。

### 四、"空载"小说及作家的社会责任

越南战后的伦理环境一方面为长篇小说的创新和发展提供了重要动力,但 另一方面也对作家的创造活动产生了不少负面影响。正如越南作家协会执行委 员会所言, 革新开放的现实释放了作家的创造潜力, 对他们的水平提出了更高 的要求。可是,一批作家仍然保留伤感态度、粗心评价、随意批判,有些作品 中的艺术处理仍然草率、偏见、缺乏说服力。这些缺点与战后越南市场经济的 负面性、金钱的力量以及一部分作家的道德水平下降密切相关1。

越南文学批评家潘巨第(Phan Cur Đê)认为市场经济除了积极方面外, 还带来了许多不良后果,最明显的是实用主义越来越严重,金钱成为无政府 主义竞争的生活方式标准。另外,道德恶化并丧失其高贵的地位,善人被孤

See The Executive of Committee of the Vietnam Writer's Association. "The Current Situation of Vietnamese Literature." Van Nghe Newspaper 28 July 1990: 3.

立并面对悲剧,邪恶由此进入社会的每个角落。 <sup>1</sup> 虽然市场经济可以为文学创造新的驱动力,比如为作家带来合法的利润和盛誉(Phan Trọng Thường, "Văn học nghệ thuật" 14),但是其消极方面导致文学作品与市场商品之间的关系失衡,以致于"假货"文学和"劣质商品"越来越多。这种消极性促使了"空载"(không tải)小说的出现,即没有道德、思想、内容和艺术价值,主要以娱乐为主的作品(Phan Cự Đệ 3)。

达纳·希利(Dana Healy)认为,革新开放背景下的商业化、消费主义 文化和全球化对越南文学产生了关键影响, 使文学更加接近市场经济法则, 同时也有助于创造更加具有活力和多样性的文学面貌<sup>2</sup>。但实际上,越南文艺 市场有些混乱,作家为了追逐商品价格而忽略文学的真正价值,混淆好坏, 导致整个市场充斥着大量劣质商品。而且市场经济法则还影响了文学创造者 与接受者的关系,将其转变为制造者与购买者的关系。这一做法导致真正的 意义和艺术价值被推到了次要地位,从而形成了一种针对个人利益、真假混 合、贪名图利的文学和文学批评3。在文学伦理学批评视野看来,越越南革 新开放时期文学市场的消极极表现体现了一种非功利性"审美",即作作家 倾向于追求经济利益以及把文学的教诲功能放在了一边。聂珍钊教授认为: "我们不否认市场对文学的接受程度是衡量文学价值的一个因素,但是文学 的市场价值并不能等同于文学的伦理价值,用物质欲望取代道德追求是一种 危险趋向"(《文学伦理学批评导论》4-5)。换言之,一部真正的文学作 品必须拥有教育价值、道德榜样、扬善抑恶、给予读者伦理启示。"这就是 文学的教诲功能,也是文学的功利性特点"(《基本理论》17)。显然,这 种功利性特点与非功利性审美完全相反。因此,越南1986年后的"空载"小 说并不被认为是真正的文学作品,必然会被淘汰。其原因在于"没有教诲功 能的文学是不存在的"(《谈文学》14)。正如裴平诗(Bùi Bình Thi)的 《情呆子》 (Dai tình, 2009) 和黎桥如 (Lê Kiều Như) 的《链条》 (Soi xích, 2010)这两本城市小说都被撤回和停止发行。前者对性的描写非常糟糕,整 本书就像一部"色情电影"一样,而后者对性的描写很粗鲁,一点儿审美性 也没有。这两个例子证明作品中的性因素需要经过恰当处理才能创造出审美 效果和艺术价值。作家的某个错误选择都必须付出相应的代价。再如,2008 年8月黄明祥(Hoàng Minh Tường)由作家协会出版社出版的《圣神的时光》 (Thời của thánh thần)。虽然在出版之后,《圣神的时光》已经在市场上掀 起了一股热潮,尤其是在盗版书的市场上,但是该作品仍然被撤回,并截至

<sup>1</sup> See Phan, De C. "Literature of Renovation and Its Logical Steps." *Van Nghe Newspaper* 28 Nov 1992: 3.

<sup>2</sup> See D. Healy. "New Voices: Socio-Cultural Trajectories of Vietnamese Literature in the 21st Century." Asian and African Studies 1(2013): 6.

<sup>3</sup> See Phan, Thuong T. "Literatue and Art in the Market Mechanism." *Van Nghe Newspaper* 20 Dec 2008: 14.

目前尚未重新发行。这本长篇小说描写了自1945年以来越南社会的很多问题,其中包括土地改革。事实上,选择描述像越南北部20世纪五六十年代土地改革一样敏感的题材是黄明祥勇敢的伦理选择。该选择表明作者接受越南文学中所谓"禁地"题材的挑战。可是,黄明祥的这项伦理选择并没有合法的道德伦理立场的坚定支持。换句话讲,《圣神的时光》没有正确的伦理指向,该作者对土地改革表示了阴暗、邪恶和抹黑等一系列消极态度。出于此原因,它被归类为"空载"小说并在越南没有合法出版。

除此之外,越南革新开放以来长篇小说创作在很大程度上受到出版活动的影响。在1986年之后,促进越南文学空间复兴的重要因素之一便是国内出版业的转型。越南革新开放之前的出版业本身是非营利的,根据国家补贴的计划经济机制进行生产,以满足国家的宣传需求为主<sup>1</sup>。值得注意的是,出版活动也会受到市场经济法则的影响。其中,政府对出版业的管理不善、文学理论家和批评家缺乏及时性和敏感性导致了出版活动混乱不堪、质量低劣。在范德(Phạm Đức)看来,读者之所以能够获取越来越多"坏"与"脏"的书籍,是因为审阅制度达不到政府的要求(2)。越南另一名学者陈宝兴(Tràn Bảo Hung)还指责了越南文学理论家和批评家:"面临创作和出版活动的迅速转变,在庞大数量的书籍日益涌入市场并在街道的报摊上比肩接踵出现时,批评理论界变得茫然自失。在许多情况下,批评理论界不那么敏感,并无法发现创作中的好坏对错"(3)。这些都可能是造成越南1986年后出现"空载"小说的重要原因。

就小说创作来讲,出版是小说家传播作品以及在文坛上崭露头角的重要渠道。当面对市场经济法则,尤其是唾手可得的利益以及政府管理的不善时,真正的作家必须做出正确的伦理选择。现实已证明耸人听闻的书籍、"廉价"小说或对国家政治安全有害的作品会逐渐被驱逐出国内市场,取而代之的是好书或多次重印的优良小说,这就证明了小说家正义的伦理选择中包含着真正的价值。

### 结语

总的来讲,越南 1986 年以来的革新浪潮创造了一种新的现实,或者说出现了一种所谓战后及革新开放的伦理环境。这种伦理环境与越南战争十年后(1975-1985)和革新开放政策息息相关,促成了越南当代文学,尤其是长篇小说的整体发展。越南新的伦理环境既有外在的影响,也有内在的变化,同时也促使作家通过具体的创作活动做出了相应的伦理选择。战后越南文学在伦理环境上的最根本差异在于 1975 年之前是战争局势,而 1975 年之后是和平局势。所以,1975 年后越南文学从受战时规律的影响变为和平时期规律的

<sup>1</sup> See D. Healy. "New Voices: Socio-Cultural Trajectories of Vietnamese Literature in the 21<sup>st</sup> Century." *Asian and African Studies* 1(2013): 8.

影响。和平时期的伦理环境经过了革新之前、补贴制度、市场经济、国际融合、全球化等阶段,已经产生了积极和消极的作用。小说家身处这种伦理环境中并并受其影响,这些影响反映在他们所写小小说的不同内容、艺术和意识形态层面。伦理环境的变化要求作家呈现当当今生活的积极多面性。此外,这种伦理环境也要求小说家举起道德伦理的旗帜,强烈深刻地描述社会伦理主题,对社会流行病、金钱主义、人的坏习惯不断批判。可以说,越南革新开放以来长篇小说是"一场壮观的接力赛跑"(Nguyễn Thành 278)。其过程中出现了强大及多种风格的作家队伍,小说在内容和艺术上都进行了突破更新。为了获得这些成就,真正的作家必须在新的伦理环境中就选择正面还是负面进行激烈斗争,为读者提供道德经典,从而完善读者的道德修养,进而改善社会。因此,越南长篇小说的旅程不会停止,仍在向新的未来发展。

#### **Works Cited**

- Ban Bí thư Trung ương Đảng. "Tăng cường sự lãnh đạo của Đảng đối với công tác báo chí, xuất bản." Báo Văn Nghệ 11 tháng tám 1990: 3.
- [The Secretariat of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of Vietnam. "Strengthening the Party's Leadership over Press and Publishing Work." *Van Nghe Newspaper* 11 Aug 1990: 3.]
- Ban chấp hành Hội Nhà văn Việt Nam. "Tình hình văn học hiện nay." *Báo Văn Nghệ* 28 tháng bảy 1990: 3.
- [The Executive of Committee of the Vietnam Writer's Association. "The Current Situation of Vietnamese Literature." *Van Nghe Newspaper* 28 July 1990: 3.]
- Healy, Dana. "New Voices: Socio-Cultural Trajectories of Vietnamese Literature in the 21st Century." Asian and African Studies 1(2013): 1-30.
- Nguyễn Minh Châu. "Hãy đọc lời ai điếu cho một giai đoạn văn nghệ minh họa." *Báo Văn Nghệ* 5 tháng mười hai 1987: 2 & 15.
- [Nguyen, Chau M. "Let Us Read A Funeral Oration for A Period of Illustrative Literature and Art." *Van Nghe Newspaper* 5 Dec 1987: 2 & 15.]
- Nguyễn Thành. "Tiểu thuyết Việt Nam sau 1986 Dấu ấn đổi mới qua đề tài, chủ đề và phương thức thể hiện." *Văn học Việt Nam ba mươi năm đổi mới (1986-2016): Sáng tạo và tiếp nhận.* Ed. Nguyễn Thành, Hồ Thế Hà. Hà Nội: Nhà xuất bản Văn học, 2017. 267-78.
- [Nguyen, Thanh. "Vietnamese Novels after 1986: Imprints of Innovation through Themes, Topics, and Modes of Expression." *Thirty Years of Renovation (1986-2016) of Vietnamese Literature: Creation and Reception*, edited by Nguyen Thanh. Ho The Ha. Hanoi: Literature Publishing House, 2017. 267-78.]
- Nguyễn Thi Bình. Văn xuôi Việt Nam sau 1975. Hà Nôi: Nhà xuất bản Đai học Sự pham, 2015.
- [Nguyen, Binh T. *Vietnamese Prose after 1975*. Hanoi: Hanoi National University of Education Publishing House, 2015.]

- Nguyễn Văn Linh. "Đồng chí Tổng bí thư Nguyễn Văn Linh nói chuyện với văn nghệ sĩ." Báo Văn Nghê 17 tháng mười 1987: 3.
- [Nguyen, Linh V. "The General Secretary Nguyen Van Linh Talks with Writers and Artists." Van Nghe Newspaper 17 Oct 1987: 3.]
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 基本理论与术语", 《外国文学研究》1(2010): 12-22。
- [Nie, Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Fundaments and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1(2010): 12-22.]
- —: "文学伦理学批评:伦理选择与斯芬克斯因子",《外国文学研究》6(2011):1-13。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Choice and Sphinx Factor." Foreign Literature Studies 6(2011): 1-13.]
- ——: "谈文学的伦理价值和教诲功能", 《文学评论》2(2014): 13-15。
- [—. "On the Ethical Value and Education Function of Literature." *Literary Review* 2 (2014): 13-15.]
- —:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- Phan Cự Đê. "Văn học đổi mới và những bước đi hợp quy luật." Báo Văn Nghệ 28 tháng mười một 1992: 3.
- [Phan, De C. "Literature of Renovation and Its Logical Steps." Van Nghe Newspaper 28 Nov 1992: 3.]
- Phan Trong Thưởng. "Văn học nghệ thuật trong cơ chế thị trường." Báo Văn Nghệ 20 tháng mười hai 2008: 14.
- [Phan, Thuong T. "Literatue and Art in the Market Mechanism." Van Nghe Newspaper 20 Dec 2008:
- —. "Để có cái nhìn toàn diện về văn học thời kì Đổi mới." Văn học Việt Nam ba mươi năm đổi mới (1986-2016): Sáng tạo và tiếp nhận. Ed. Nguyễn Thành, Hồ Thế Hà. Hà Nội: Nhà xuất bản Văn hoc, 2017. 11-20.
- [-.. "To Have a Comprehensive View of the Literature of the Renovation Period." Thirty Years of Renovation (1986-2016) of Vietnamese Literature: Creation and Reception, edited by Nguyen Thanh, Ho The Ha. Hanoi: Literature Publishing House, 2017. 11-20.]
- Phạm Đức. "Lương tâm và trách nhiệm." Báo Văn Nghệ 29 tháng tư 1989: 2.
- [Pham, Duc. "Conscience and Responsibility." Van Nghe Newspaper 29 April 1989: 2.]
- Rato, Montira. Peasants and the Countryside in Post-1975 Vietnamese Literature. 2003. University of London, PhD dissertation.
- Trần Bảo Hưng. "Thực trạng lý luận, phê bình văn học và đôi điều kiến nghị." Báo Văn Nghệ 13 tháng bảy 1991: 3.
- [Tran, Hung B. "The Situation of Literary Theories and Criticism and Some Recommendations." Van Nghe Newspaper 13 July 1991: 3.]



# 世界文学研究论坛

聂珍钊 / 广东外语外贸大学 查尔斯・罗斯 / 普渡大学(美国)

## **Editors in Chief**

Nie Zhenzhao, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, China Charles Ross, Purdue University, U.S.A

